

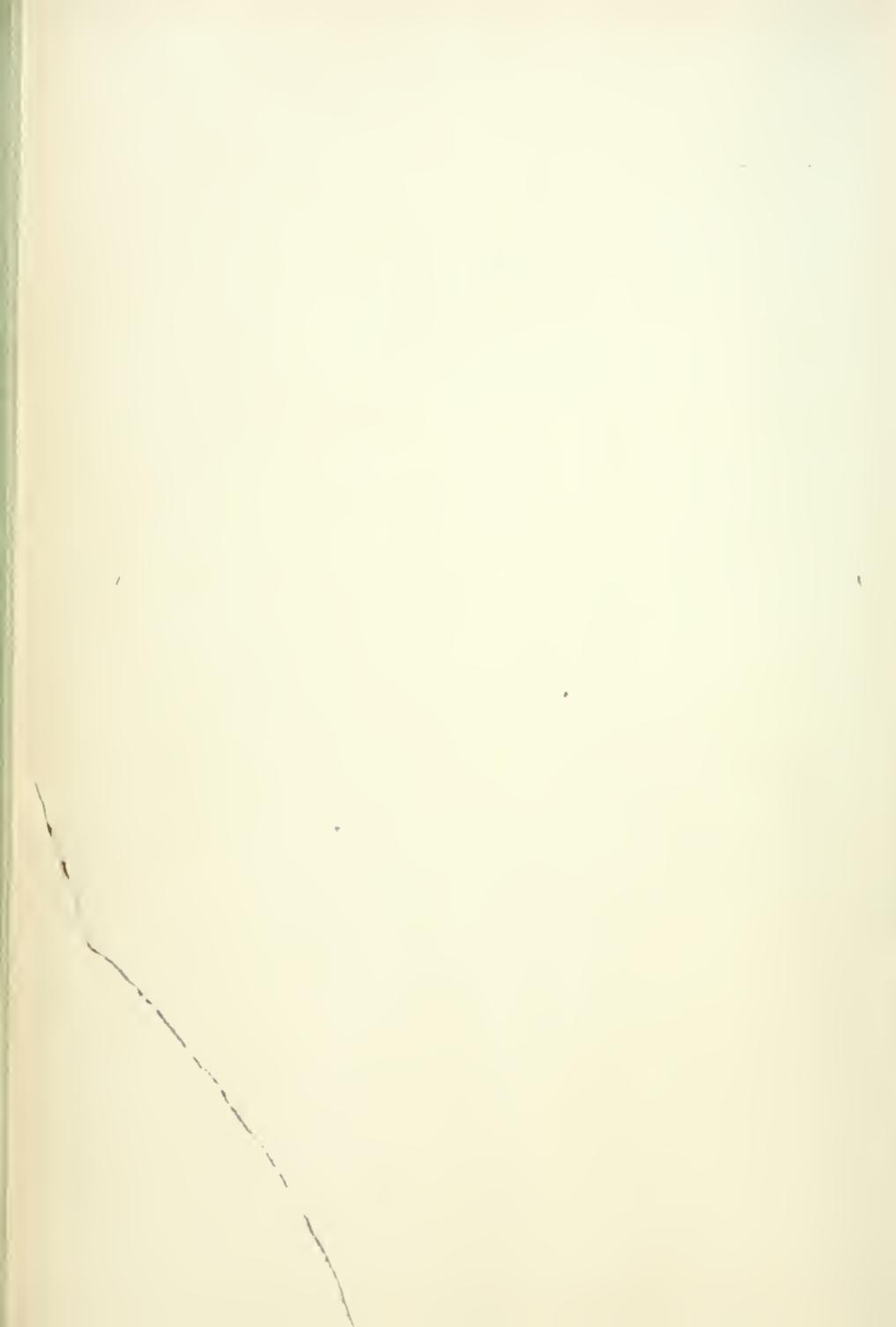
NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 06824462 7

H. N. ALLAN
H. G. A.

Field
ZFK



THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

The Pathway of Life Through Creation

By
Silas M. Field



THE STRATFORD COMPANY
Publishers
BOSTON, MASSACHUSETTS



Copyright 1920
The STRATFORD CO., Publishers
Boston, Mass.

The Alpine Press, Boston, Mass., U. S. A.

Introduction

Reader:—

This book is not offered to you as a scholarly treatise, or literary effort.

It was written primarily for the personal benefit of the writer only, and not to be offered as a publication.

The reason of the origin of the work was, that as the writer saw that his years of sojourn here were nearing an end, it occurred to him that he ought to KNOW just what he had learned while journeying thus far, but more especially, what he had learned and his decisions in regard to himself.

This thought was carried into effect, by the determination to write out carefully, beginning at the beginning, the details of the proposition in question; so that when written, it should embody the knowledge acquired, the belief, and the conclusions and determinations of the writer.

He offers this book to others, as he did to himself, as a standard with which to estimate.

His hope is that it will prove to be an instrument in eliminating error, and in the manifestation of the truth.

And this book he has dedicated to his Creator, with the only prayer that he knows: Thy Will Be Done, O God.

S. M. FIELD.

128 BLACKSTONE ST.,
WOONSOCKET, R. I.
February 19, 1914.



The Divisions or Epochs, in History, of Time

THE FIRST EPOCH

Begins in Infinity, with an Infinite First Cause.
Ends with the Beginning of Physical Energy.

THE SECOND EPOCH

Begins with Physical Energy.
Ends with the Evolution of Physical Gases.

THE THIRD EPOCH

Begins with Physical Gases.
Ends with the fully developed Mineral Kingdom.

THE FOURTH EPOCH

Begins with the Vegetable Protoplasmic cell life.
Ends with the fully developed Vegetable Kingdom.

THE FIFTH EPOCH

Begins with the Animal Protoplasmic cell life.
Ends with a fully perfected Animal Kingdom.

THE SIXTH EPOCH

Begins with Man as a Mental Being.

Ends with Mental Perfection in a Knowledge of a Creator,
and the Voluntary Absolute Desire to be at One With Him.
The Transition Stage from the Physical to the Spiritual Existence
of the Human Being, as an Individual.

THE SEVENTH EPOCH

Begins with the Acceptance of the perfected Human Being
into the Spiritual Existence.

Ends in an Infinite Individual Condition.

The End of the Earthly Physical Existence.

INFINITY.

Prologue

My friend :—

Referring at this time, to your inquiry “as to whether there is in existence any definite, established proof or record, delineating this Pathway of Life Through Creation ; (the which we had previously discussed,) and if it were available, and by whom it might be understood?” Please allow me to say, that there is in existence absolute proof, and a full and complete record, of every step of Nature’s advance from the beginning to the present time ; no detail is wanting, and every step taken by Nature in her advance explains itself. And if it is necessary to reveal the future, she will do so.

There are no breaks in creation’s progress at any time, although it may appear so to one not acquainted with her ways and methods; her progress is one unbroken line of DEVELOPMENT from the beginning, for EVOLUTION is only development in its most exquisite condition.

As a part of the GREAT INFINITE, NATURE within herself is absolute, as she is inherently indued with all that is necessary to automatically accomplish her purpose.

In contemplating his surroundings here, a human being, whether he is savage or civilized, reasons that there is a cause for what he sees about him, and he believes that the attributes attending this cause are great or less, depending on his own ability to think and reason, and his desire to know.

To the civilized human being, who will think and reason, and who seeks earnestly to know, this CAUSE is GOD, and HIS ATTRIBUTES are INFINITE and ABSOLUTE.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

So we realize that by THOUGHT and REASON, through the teachings of God by REVELATION and THROUGH NATURE, the human mind comprehends THE FACT, that there is a CAUSE for the existence of the human being here, and for all that there is about him.

God does not exist as a solitary being in some central locality somewhere; He is everywhere, in all things and conditions; there is no place, thing, or condition where He is not.

It is exceedingly hard for the human reason to conceive of God as being a CONDITION; man is wedded to the idea that a being, any being, must be more or less a physical structure; much harder still is it for the human being to grasp the idea that he himself is a condition; but the answer to this is at once made plain, when we realize that were the Infinite Cause to will to dissolve this Universe, all that appears as Physical Things would at once become Infinite Power.

God is Omnipresent and Omnipotent.

This POWER is being eternally projected forth from Him, and this is His Living Law, or His word.

There exists between God and His Law, or between the Infinite Cause and His Emanations, an attractive relationship that is AFFINITY.

The RESULT of this eternally outgoing and incoming Power, is the UNIVERSE as man realizes it.

NATURE, when taken in its fullest sense, is the Universe, the result, or CREATION of God by His Word or Law.

Were man to know ALL that there is to know in Nature, he would know all that he could know of God as a human being; but he would not know all of God, because he would have reached INFINITY in all directions, and God surrounds all of this. Hence we may speak of Nature as God.

PROLOGUE

I will now try and set in order these proofs, and records, for your benefit, as I have found them in my search through the many works and efforts of those great men to whom the profoundest esteem is due; to these master minds, both men and women, who have toiled so unceasingly to wrest from Nature's great storehouse the secrets of her past accomplishments, and are still laboring on to discover if possible her intentions for the future.

The great problem of the Origin, Development and Destiny of the human family, is one that has taxed the most profound minds since Man began to think and reason; and it almost seems to us now, as the last rays of the fast dying day of man are growing dim, that we can glimpse the brighter rays of a new morning that is about to dawn, but we will not anticipate. Step by step I will try to uncover to you (what you are pleased to call the "Mystery of Life") the Pathway of Life.

I will also show that it is as easily available to all, as it is to myself, and that it may be read and understood by any human being who earnestly desires to know, if that one will think and reason.

I also intend to show that there are no MYSTERIES in this, except to the indifferent, and willful or hypocritically ignorant. Generally, I shall simply make statements, and not stop to explain, nor to give minor details. These lesser details will all be found in authoritative reference books.

In dealing with the Physical Universe, we realize that there was a conception in the Infinite Mind, to make use of (as it were) a portion of Himself in this peculiar manner; ordaining that this portion should pass through certain evolutions and conditions, thereby evolving an individual being

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

who would be found to be similar to the Infinite, but in miniature, when such part should again be allowed to return to Him.

The reason for such a conception, and its ultimate fulfillment, is not apparent to us at present. Infinity is reached in both directions.

From this position of vantage, it is possible to get a clear comprehension of the beginning of creation, for (in the ordinary expressions of the day, as concerning things and conditions,) the generally accepted theory of the Universe will be followed.

God is first; from Him emanates His Power, accomplishing His purpose, and returning.

Divine Power with a Positive and Negative Influence, is the Element of which the Universe is born, and every atom, till all is dissolved into Infinite Law again, must inherently carry in itself this Element, as a SYMBOL of its origin, beginning, being and sustaining conditions.

In order now, to set forth more clearly what I wish to say, I shall divide Time into three parts; first, The Creation from the beginning to Man; second, from Man to the present generation; and third, The Future and End.

And so in order to do this the more easily, I shall in the first part take the role as of a being having a spiritual existence, and call myself a PHANTOM; and, having the power to view all things and conditions; and together and at the same time having the knowledge and language as of one who has passed through physical conditions, and having become perfect, was allowed this opportunity; and in this condition, using reason as a human being, I shall endeavor to set in order the conditions of the beginning of Creation, and the development of the Physical Universe, but more especially of our own Solar System, and of our Earth to the time of Man. Then as a

PROLOGUE

human being I shall bring all creation down to the present time; and then from the standpoint of a human being, with the aid of Divine Revelation and through Prediction, I shall then show what the future is to be; and this will be from my own individual standpoint as a man and an individual of this Christian Generation.

I now become a Phantom, and so remain until I arrive from the beginning to the time of Man.

CREATION

Creation

I NOW exist as a condition, and without physical form; I have no dimensions, so am neither large nor small; I exist as an individual, understanding the will of God; a sensation makes this known to me; there are no conditions where I may not enter, for me to will to be in any place or condition, is to be there.

I see, hear, feel and sense as a human being all that I pass through, without its having any effect on me.

So, speaking from this vantage position, and in defiance of all natural laws, as man knows them, physically speaking, I am now in a condition of ABSOLUTE DARKNESS. Not a ray of light, not an emanation of any sort that would be discoverable to any known human sense, and the COLD is ABSOLUTE, and would tax the imagination of man.

I am in the midst of, and surrounded by, an awful and terrific POWER, but as yet there is no physical thing upon which this Power can act; I am bound by it, sustained by it, propelled by it, I sense that this is the LIFE OF GOD, MY LIFE; I have no fear, I am satisfied and confident; I intuitively sense that all I should know will be revealed by Infinite Influence.

As I look out upon this dark cold nothing, a sensation tells me to note the Beginning of Creation. Speaking as a human being, I now realize that I am about to see as in a picture vision, the re-creation of the Universe, and that as I am seeing it, I am also taking a part in it, and am in every condition.

The outgoing and incoming of this Power about me, is ETERNALLY CONTINUOUS, it is one unbroken flow in both directions; a pulsation of this power may go and return in the shortest possible space of time, another may take a year, and others will take other periods of time, some needing decades to accomplish their purposes and return, while others may be thousands, or billions of years, or of periods of time beyond the computation of man.

While this Power is going and returning, or PULSATING in one unbroken continuous flow, each Throb or Pulse Beat is at the same time VIBRATING WITHIN ITSELF, and these vibrations are terrific, the human understanding has nothing by which it can estimate or describe the brightness of this eternal light that exists as an element of this Power; so, while I am in this great sea of these powerful light rays, and they are throbbing, pulsating and vibrating through me, to the human being this condition is darker than darkness itself.

My attention is now called by a sensation, to note CERTAIN Power Pulsations or Waves, that are now being sent forth to accomplish a certain purpose, and then return at a predetermined time. I note these Waves, and also a change that is taking place as indefinite ages pass. This change, as I see it, taking place, consists in a wave of this power now becoming ATOMIC or GRANULAR. All conditions continue as before, with this condition added, and these particles of Light-Power all have a NEW MOVEMENT of their own; each one revolves on its own axis, and they all revolve around each other at a tremendous speed, they whirl about each other in aggregations of a few, or in numbers beyond reckoning, and in doing this they acquire a new element; or rather, each of these particles is now carrying an ELECTRON, and these are both POSITIVE and NEGATIVE in character.

CREATION

The size of each of these granules, particles, or ultimate atoms is predetermined by the rate at which they vibrate; an INFINITE VIBRATION within an INFINITE PULSATION, or WAVE OF INFINITE WILL POWER, granulates this pulsation into ULTIMATE ATOMS, of PHYSICAL ENERGY; and this rate of vibration in the atoms of Physical Energy, is the predetermined, self centered, Infinitely controlling will power, now become a PHYSICAL ELEMENT, man calls ELECTRONS. Each atom is large enough and only large enough to carry one Electron, and each Electron can and does control one and only one atom, or Ion.

This is the FIRST GREAT EPOCH in creation. These divisions that I shall make are not arbitrary, they best suit the subject. This Epoch started with the Infinite Power, and it ends in Infinite Physical Energy; for this condition that we have now is the UNIVERSAL AETHER, RADIANT ENERGY, or the MAGNETIC LIGHT POWER the BASIS of PHYSICAL THINGS.

I note in this great change, that the cause for it is in each of these particles, an inherent tendency or inclination to do so; and all of this is but the changed condition of what previously existed.

Again, ages have passed, and while I have been watching and reasoning, I note that many of these Electrons have combined, and each particle is now much larger, the vibratory movement is slower, and the light rays are now just visible to the human eye, while the combined Electrons form a greater power, and exert a greater influence on each other, causing further combinations. This condition repeats itself over and over countless times during the long ages that pass, until I notice that vast masses of enormous extent are now all about me; each of these masses revolve around a common centre, while

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

each of the countless particles revolves on its own axis; and at the same time this mass is made up of numberless SYSTEMS that are revolving around small centres of their own.

I now go to the many of the various masses, and I find them all alike, and in practically the same condition, and each of these is producing a terrific power that is felt by each and all of the others; each of these masses is now one blaze of light that man can plainly see.

I return to my present position, after ages of investigation and I now find that in this mass that I am observing there are parts of it more dense than the rest, and that these are combining and getting nearer to the centre, while the smaller combinations are thrown farther away from the centre by the centrifugal force caused by the high rate of revolution.

This condition is the NEBULOUS condition of the UNIVERSE, and these masses are the Nebulae of Astronomical Science; these have not all advanced to the same condition, some are nearly ready to develop into a new condition, while others are just beginning to develop into the Nebulous state. Millions of ages apart. It is certainly a magnificent spectacle to watch Nature at work with these great forces, handling them at her will, and developing and progressing to a definite and predetermined end; progress is neither up nor down with Nature, but forward to a preconceived accomplishment; as her development is but a change from one condition to another.

While I have been thus reasoning, I note that a tremendous change has now just begun in one of the Nebulae. A large number of the SYSTEMS of the mass of this Nebula have combined, and this new mass would now form a solid centre, if the motion would allow it, but it cannot; the attraction of these parts toward the centre is tremendous, while the centrifugal force is terrific; all of these parts of this great whole are now vibrating

CREATION

much more slowly, although this vibration is still very great, while the different rotary movements are extremely rapid, causing this mass as it revolves in the sea of as yet ungranulated Aether, to collect and discharge the always rising Electric Potential Energy. All of these conditions working together cause the formation of a hollow dense walled Nebulous body to appear, and again cause it to become still more and more dense, until, all at once, a new element is developed: FIRE is now here, with its awful attendant HEAT. The density has now become very great, and the combination of the tiny particles of the beginning, has now reached a climax, producing MATERIAL ATOMS, the first Atoms of Creation; and these Atoms, each of which is hundreds of times larger than the Aether Granule, are what science terms GASES. These are no more Physical Things than any other previous development; they are but a forward development in changes of condition. The HYDROGEN of science is now burning at a terrific rate by the aid of OXYGEN, and so after untold ages have passed, the Second Epoch of the history of Creation closes.

It will be understood when I say that to speak in terms of TIME,—time as human beings understand it, that has now elapsed since I first noted the beginning of the changing of Divine Energy into the present Physical Gases,—is too great for the human mind to grasp; the century unit is as the Atom to the great Oceans.

God in Nature employs always two elementary Principles, the infinitely small, and the indefinitely great: things begin with particles so small as to be almost incomprehensible to the human mind; while time and conditions are so great as to quite stagger the human reason.

The marvellous and magnificent spectacle exhibited as Nature opens the Third Epoch of Creation, is one that appeals to the human senses more than those previously mentioned, be-

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

cause of the fact that the human mind can grasp it; it is not so elusive.

These BODIES, as these burning masses will be termed, to distinguish them from the Nebulous condition, are now appearing in all parts of the Universe, and the contrast between the light of these and that of the Nebulae is very great. While the human eye notes the great difference in rays and color, the Spectroscope of science alone reveals the actual developed difference in the interior structural formation through the light of the burning material; and this burning material may, by its light, be read and known to an accuracy that amounts to perfection.

This burning has now been going on for millions and millions of ages, and during this time I have watched these wonderful changes that have taken place in development.

From the first burning Gases another is evolved; CARBON DIOXIDE now appears with NITROGEN following; while in quick succession appear SODIUM, POTASSIUM and many other gases; while in turn, as each of these new elements appears, it at once combines with some other element, forming still other new elements.

I note that the combinations taking place during the earliest part of this Epoch, when the gases were more vaporous, and with very high vibration, and the heat most intense, that the combinations then produced elements whose lines appear earlier on the VIOLET side of the SPECTRUM, while others follow farther down in position in the spectrum; this is only noticeable on close scrutiny, as different parts of the wall of this bubble are at work with different elements at the same time.

The internal condition now exhibited in this burning body is changing rapidly; and although we are experiencing the

CREATION

passing of ages upon ages, yet the limits are far less than formerly; the action of this fire in burning the gases prevents the previous atoms of undeveloped matter from further combining in large masses of unfinished material; it keeps these atoms without destruction in a suspended VAPORIZED CONDITION, which, through combinations and development, growing heavier and more dense, are being pushed forward to a further definite purpose.

The great density now acquired by this semi-elastic vaporous fluid causes the formation of a more compact walled hollow sphere or bubble, the walls of which are not all of the same density in all places, nor is it perfectly spherical. It is very dense within, growing less so on nearing the outer layers; within this rim, or wall, the systems prevail as previously in the nebulous formation; and while the systems disappear as the vaporous gas combinations of the extreme interior portion of the wall cease, the outer portions of the wall are yet a mass of whirling systems, being drawn into the vortex by the awful attraction caused by the vacuum of the hollow interior, across which the powerful Magnetic Lines of Force alone may pass.

As the axial movement of this body is straining the walls of this bubble to the breaking point, and as the flexible, undulating walls get nearer to this stress-breaking point, more material is added from the exterior in great blobs and splotches, unevenly distributed, causing greater velocity both axially and orbitally; and this causes the walls to expand yet more, and the VACUUM GRAVITATIONAL FORCE to become greater and greater; and each of these bodies acting in the same manner both in themselves, and upon each other, then produce a wondrous spectacle unknown through the eyes to any human being.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

As these burning gases combine until they reach a limit, and become opposed to each other, and settle down as finished products, though still vapors, they find their way to the interior walls of this bubble and begin forming into a semi-liquid condition, with less vibrations, and with still as intense heat, but less brilliant light than is seen in the outer parts of the envelope.

We have now Electrical Influence, or Magnetic Lines of FORCE between all parts of the Universe, and filling all space between and about all parts of the whole Universe with a sea of latent power carried by the Aether as science knows it; this Aether is not only a light of itself of very high octave, though unseen by the human eye because of its high vibrations, and only known to man as the origin and direct means of the life of all animated nature; but it also acts as a vehicle for the transmission of light from any highly potent magnetic mass, or burning matter. It may remain quiet or it may become violently disturbed, as we have seen. While this is the most powerful of all the elements known, yet it is the most sensitive; the slightest impulse may be sent across the confines of the Universe by reason of its adaptability.

This Electrical condition WITHIN ALL BODIES is termed MAGNETISM; both Electricity and Magnetism are different phases of one great law, they are both of a dual nature with attractive and repellent forces, with the affinity existing between them which in turn is caused by, and exists by reason of, the existence of the first condition as between God and His Law.

My attention is again called to these vast burning bodies, that whirl and swirl about; that from the flaming burning state of not long ago, they seem, the smaller ones especially, to show signs of becoming plastic in places, and to resemble

CREATION

a boiling liquid internally; and also these bodies are more spherical; too, I notice that while they usually retain their direction in which they at first started on their movements, they change their speed a great deal, although there seems to be a relationship between the axial and orbital movements; if the axial movement is slower the orbital is faster, and vice versa; sometimes it seems as though it would be impossible to avert a collision, as I look upon these bodies swirling about with such great rapidity.

But all this is regulated by the prevalent power controlling them.

Too, the awful storms caused by the heat and cold, and the awful slopping about of these boiling masses, cause these masses to roll about in many different directions; within a short time, I noticed in many instances these changes: the axis would be where the equator had been, and very shortly the conditions would be reversed, and so on all the while all of these masses working unceasingly, seemingly to produce a something NEW out of the elements at hand, not destroying, but evolving new elements, being positively guided to some definite end.

Ages upon ages have sped by while we were noting these changes, and many many other STAR bodies have appeared.

I now sense that out of these bodies is to come OUR SUN, as man knows it; and a sensation tells me to "watch this particular body as it is to be the centre of your SOLAR SYSTEM," so I continue to watch the conditions in this burning body for a time, that is to be the centre of our System, until I note that in its rim or walls there are a number of great independent balls, or heavy, sticky, stringy boiling blobs of matter, some larger than others, but all of them increasing in size fast; and seemingly some of them are on the point of

flying off from this Sun because of their weight and the velocity at which the Sun is speeding on its axis; and then all at once, I see one of these large masses of this boiling paste, or plastic liquid, thrown off from this larger body, or OUR SUN.

This seemingly liquid condition of these burning bodies is not as apparent in the body itself, as in the vast blobs thrown off during convulsions and explosions; these are thrown far away, and in passing outward and back through the intense cold, they cool from a vaporous condition to a liquid material, while in the body itself, the state is mostly that of a super-heated vapor on the outside, while the interior is a burning liquid mass. This of course only applies to the body as a shell. These outer vaporous materials are being continually drawn into the surface of the body by Gravitation, while the interior parts are being continually forced outward through centrifugal force.

While I was watching these changes, a strange thing occurred with one of the stars, it had revolved so rapidly that it had burst and it tore itself into myriads of smaller fragments, and these flew in all directions. Some flew to other bodies and were immediately absorbed, while other pieces were attracted and repelled in such a manner as to cause them to originate a peculiar elliptical orbit of their own through and amongst all of the larger bodies; these pieces very soon cooled off to a frigid hollow or solid condition; and then a wondrous spectacle ensued; these solid pieces flying with such terrific velocity through and cutting the magnetic lines of force throughout space, caused a very great rise of magnetic potential energy in these flying parts, or Comets, as scientists term them, and they had to discharge; so, that the accumulation and discharge though silent, became continuous, causing a long stream of beautiful magnetic glow to follow. This

CREATION

condition occurred in many instances, and these Comets would cross and recross each other's paths, producing a wondrous effect. They neither lost nor accumulated matter in their journey, except in instances where they would sometimes fall within the attraction of some body and be absorbed, or some other flying piece would be thrown into one of these, which would be retained.

Now, we watch this Sun of ours; and this first body that it throws off, I note, retains its shape and becomes a hollow ball as its parent, and it goes whirling about because of its eccentricity, and also whirling about this sun as a centre because of the impetus given to it at the start, and this is kept up by reason of the attraction and repulsion of all of these large bodies.

Later on, some other portions are thrown off this Sun in the same way, some of these being larger than others; but one and all are revolving about the same Sun, but at different distances from it; the first thrown off going much farther away, because of being thrown from a much larger periphery, and with more violence; I counted something like eight of these bodies which were thrown off successively from this Sun, two of these violently exploded, and some of the fragments became Comets, while others became very small separate independent bodies; and these remained in this condition, forming the system of Asteroids, as astronomy knows it.

I was made to understand that the last one thrown off, was to be OUR EARTH, and to be the DWELLING PLACE OF MAN, and was told to WATCH IT CAREFULLY; subsequently I noted that two other bodies were thrown off from our Sun, but they went revolving around it much nearer than our Earth.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

About this time, too, I noted that these bodies that had been thrown off from our Sun, had in turn begun to throw off portions of themselves; I noted this in many instances, but more especially in connection with one thrown off from our own Earth; I was particularly interested in this because I knew that this was to be OUR MOON.

The complete Solar System is now swinging through space, the central body, the Sun, with its attendant Planets, and these with their Satellites, complete the group.

These Planets that have been thrown off from the Sun seem to have been (as we know) very dense heavy masses formed within the vaporous matter, and they could not hold their position because of their weight, and the velocity, and so were thrown off while the Sun still remained practically the same, growing a little more dense, but not altering much, and seemingly so well balanced as not to be inclined to throw off any other bodies.

All of these Planets have now become very dense and heavy, more like molten metal; they can no longer throw off portions of themselves, but continue to boil and seethe like huge cauldrons.

I now turn my attention to the Earth, especially as it is with it that I am most concerned, it has already thrown off its satellite, the Moon, and this Moon has already begun to show signs of cooling off, as it is quite small comparatively, though it is still in a boiling state. The Earth is in a state of violent ebullition, boiling, seething, exploding and tearing itself apart, heaving great sloppy masses of white hot matter in all directions, cooling and crystallizing in the act, returning and smashing through and plunging into the fiery molten mass, slopping it in all directions, and all of this in perfect silence, as man would understand it.

CREATION

The Moon is now revolving upon its own axis, a hollow ball, at a considerable rate of speed, and also around the Earth in the same direction as the Earth is turning.

I realize that things and conditions are going to be very interesting here now. Aeons upon aeons have passed since I first saw the first intimations of physical matter in the gases as they were evolved from Energy itself.

Again, the storms due to heat and cold, and the reforming of new elements in these boiling Planets causing explosions and convulsions such as the human mind can scarcely conceive of, at the same time cause great differences in the Earth and Moon; but little by little these seem to be settling down to a more regular rotation; the Earth has now become a viscous, sticky, stringy plastic mass, boiling and bubbling over the terrible fires beneath; it is growing less and less liquid, and more like a mass that is about to take on a granular composition.

Far away from the Earth a heavy MIST appears, showing the formation of water, but the Earth is as yet too hot to allow it to remain near it.

And I now note, after white hot vaporous matter has been blown into space, that in returning it has crystalline forms of various colors, showing that the METAL elements are being formed, though as yet in vapor.

Free Carbon Dioxide and Nitrogen have appeared; this tells me that many gases have been free, and have recombined, such as Sodium, Potassium, and Hydrogen.

Up to this time my attention has been directed to what has been going on with the Earth, but now I turn my attention to the Moon, and were I human I would be surprised, to see that it, being so small comparatively, has cooled down so that it has a hard black crust; an explosion frequently takes place,

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

and often some of the burning interior flashes and streams out through the cracks in this crust; then some of the high mountain peaks are blown off. But this is gradually subsiding, and all in silence. All at once there is a terrific explosion; an enormous piece is blown off the Moon, and it goes to a great distance; and in returning rests in a different place. The mass of the Moon is now so cool that this makes but little impression, but it causes a much greater weight to fall outside its axis on one side, and now this side comes into the direct draw of the Earth, and the independent axial revolution of the Moon stops.

An ATMOSPHERE is now formed by reason of the free Oxygen and Nitrogen. Carbonic Acid Gas is plenty. The sunlight is nearly shut out now, and it is very murky and dark, because of the mist, vapor, gases and fine dust particles, while the dull red lurid glow thrown from a red hot earth crust in most places, and the too frequent flash from combustion and explosion thrown against the lowering clouds of mist and debris, is certainly fascinating; and because of the beginning of an atmosphere, there are sounds now, and could the human ear hear them they would be fearful.

Ages upon ages have passed while I have been noticing the development of this Solar System. Meantime other centers, stars or suns, have similarly developed, details differing but little.

I find on close scrutiny, that the material that is cooling off and getting solid on the Earth, is the same as that which we saw ages and ages ago forming in the Sun, and now existing there but in vapor.

My attention a short time since, was called to a peculiar condition transpiring in connection with one of the Planets; it had been revolving on its axis for a considerable period of

time, in the direction of its travel in its orbit; great convulsions had taken place, it had thrown off some matter that had already become a Satellite and was revolving in the same direction around the Planet as the movement of the Planet itself; all at once another convulsion takes place in the Planet and it becomes overbalanced on one side causing it to revolve in the opposite direction to its travel; and while doing so it again throws off another mass, and this revolves in this same direction as a Satellite; when again, because of other internal disturbances, it again starts to revolve in the same direction as at first, and again it throws off more matter which become Satellites, and these are revolving as the first one; so that this Planet has Satellites revolving in both directions around it.

Once again ages have passed. I shall now take up my position, to see what is going on, on the Earth itself, and cease wandering about the Universe, as soon as I investigate the Moon.

I have to confine myself entirely and closely to the great transformations that are about to take place, and so from this Earth position I shall view all the rest of creation.

The Moon is at last practically dead, it has burned, boiled, convulsed, and torn itself into a shapeless mass of a black, brown, and gray; hard, striated, twisted, granular, dense or porous undeveloped material; and in this condition it could not resist the awful cold about it, in its small mass; so that it cooled off quickly, an inert shapeless, worthless mass; of no use save to help by its attraction to originate and establish certain useful movements on the Earth's surface.

As I visit the Moon, and investigate, this is what I find; that there has been only a small amount of atmosphere there, and but little water; these have been so small that the Sun's rays could not help them from becoming solid when the in-

ternal heat died out; the condition of the vapors and gases has been such in cooling off that they have all become as solid as the rocks; the body is cold, no internal fires exist, and it is simply a wilderness waste of partially developed matter. On the surface there is no sign that there has ever been any life here at all, nothing but a little sand and dust, some gravel and big boulders, but principally stone, all stone, porous semi-porous, and hard, some crystallization, but not much. After examining the exterior I enter the interior at will, and I see as this mass has been thrown off the Earth in a molten condition, and it immediately assumed its own orbit around the earth, and its own revolution on its axis, this latter motion caused it to throw its molten matter to the surface, or as far as it could be thrown from its own axis, this being dependable on the plasticity and the weight of the molten matter, the rate of revolution and the force with which the great vacuum at the centre held it back. The internal fires had of course been a long time dying down. There had been violent eruptions and explosions as it began to cool, but as the crust got to be thicker and thicker, the resistance was too great and gradually the internal fires were unable to force their way to the surface. The centre was one enormous vacuum. The crust was much thicker at the poles than at the equatorial line; this was due to its not having been thrown around 90 degrees on its orbital plane when in a plastic condition. This great central vacuum had an enormous force; sufficiently so, that its power could be plainly felt to a marked degree on the surface of the Earth. There were no Electrical demonstrations, but magnetism existed; it was swinging in a sea of lines of magnetic force, cutting them at times; it cut more lines than at others, and then there would be a slight magnetic display around its north pole as it discharged noiselessly. On

CREATION

coming out I noticed that the inner wall was like glass, absolutely impervious to everything; not an atom of anything, no matter how small could enter here; nothing but the original unatomized energy, Divine Power, the Aether of the Universe could enter here hermetically sealed, and this condition of the wall was miles thick, and superimposed upon this was the general mineral combination that I have described, which made up the whole thickness of the wall.

I have returned to the Earth; ages have passed; an atmosphere has formed about the Earth; the Earth has begun to cool off, and here and there great masses of a black crust appear, enormous mountains of it, mists or clouds are gathered about these, condensing and running to the depressions below, where it is quickly dissipated. This is WATER, one of the first, new, and permanent elements to be formed as a result of the combination of the gases by fire. This is to be the great life-giving element of the Earth.

While watching the war between the elements Fire and Water, I noted that the atmosphere about the Earth,—which is a little clearer, as the heavy rainfall brings down the dust and ashes, owing to many free gases and vapors, and also to its atoms of Oxygen and Nitrogen together with a number of other free gases,—is now acting as a LENS; and this causes the Sun's rays to converge as they pass through it, which in turn causes the light rays of the sun to become heat as they reach the Earth's crust; and this condition is producing another wondrous transformation in development; this atmosphere is now one surging mass of ULTIMATE ATOM PARTICLES of all of the elements such as Nature has been using in building her solid material; these are now surging about in the atmosphere, and the warmth of the Sun's rays, together with the great power of its light rays, and the excessive humidity, are inducing an entirely different

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

combination from any heretofore seen; these ULTIMATE ATOMS of many of the elements are so small that it would require hundreds of them to make a single atom (of science) of Hydrogen, and these minute particles are forming into systems, and one of these systems when it has acquired a sufficient number of necessary atoms of the various elements to form a complete group, because of Affinity, Attraction, and Magnetism, now draws all of these hundreds of ultimate atoms in toward a centre, disposing of, and arranging these in very methodical and predetermined ways, until at last after thousands of years of the most careful and patient work, she at last produces a PROTO-PLASMIC CELL, so small that the human eye with the aid of the best Microscopic appliances can scarcely discern it, the BEGINNING of LIFE, and here the Fourth Epoch begins, although the Third is not yet ended.

I shall now follow the progress of Nature as she finishes her Inorganic Kingdom, meantime watching the growth and progress of Life Development.

I am deeply interested in the solid formations of the crust of the Earth as it is appearing now, because in this instance, everything seems to be developing to a complete or finished condition: Nature has begun to fill her storehouse, and as she looks forward and knows just what she intends to do, she is providing herself in abundance with all that she will possibly need in the future.

Great mountains of black, brown, or gray stone are everywhere, these seem to be quite permanent, but are liable to be blown off at any moment; most of this is the TRAP of the Geologist, or volcanic lava, this is an amorphic, hard, granular rock, and much Iron is present in connection with it; crystallization is apparent in the great masses of Feldspar and Quartz; in the latter I note large quantities of Gold and Silver; these

CREATION

crystalline substances, after being produced are again combined by Nature in various forms, but chiefly in Granite; I note many varieties showing Mica, Silica, Feldspar and Hornblende; I find Asbestos also. Great masses of Granite and Gneiss form beneath the Trap and turn mountains of it upside down. Great mountains of Trap as they are pushed up or blown up are rolled over and broken up, great Granite boulders smash into it and pulverize it into powder, and the Granite and Quartz is ground up into sand; but this is only in the more quiet places; this crust, or this cooling surface of rock, is still a swaying and undulating troubled sea.

The combinations that were started, have now become a great variety, and during this time the Earth has cooled down so that there is quite a crust on the face of the boiling liquid beneath; enormous masses are frequently thrown into the air, to fall back again and to smash and grind to powder everything in its path, sometimes smashing through the crust and again being remelted; and then I would see great masses of a vicious, stringy substance thrown into the air in showers of white hot spray, and this would cool and fall back in crystal form more beautiful than man has ever seen, some to be remelted, some to be ground up, and some to remain.

I watch this operation go on for ages, the whole surface of the Earth a black heaving mass of crackling crust, tumbling, grinding, crashing, roaring and snapping, all in one deafening tumult.

I watch great mountains as they are blown into the air, thousands of times, come crashing back and grind themselves into sand; I see great masses of trap rock ground into powder, I watch the fearful onrush of waters down the mountains as they carry this powder to the valleys, and it settles and becomes stone (slate). I see granite, gneiss, and silica pounded into sand

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

through the ages; and I see this sand forced beneath beds of rock and subjected to intense heat and again become stone (sandstone).

And swaying on this sealike surface, heaving and cracking, breaking and twisting, mountains are blown up only to fall back on the surface somewhere else to break it, and in turn to be ground to powder; all the while the boiling is going on beneath while this crashing and grinding is going on above; and as this action goes on, and the crust is cracked, the boiling mass quickly fills these cracks and cools again and then it breaks and turns over and is tossed up and comes down to rest again in pieces; and this goes on over and over, ages on ages, continually boiling, and cracking, cooling and twisting and distorting itself on this raging white hot sea beneath. This is repeated myriads of millions of times, frequently causing the Earth to alter its balance, causing the axis to become the equator, and the equator the axis, many times repeating this until finally these violent disturbances become less active, and conditions are quieter.

The mist now rising from the boiling water in some places on the surface, is tremendous; it, together with the ashes and dust, form an almost impenetrable cloud over the earth. The sunlight scarcely gets through, the lurid sulphurous red hot fires belching from myriads of volcanic chimneys shed an awe-inspiring glare over the whole, while the passing ages see one continuous sizzling, boiling, steaming ocean thrown into the air in steam; the atmosphere is one veritable sea of water in suspension going up and coming down, and as this vapor cools it falls back and comes crashing down the mountains carrying everything moveable before it; for ages there is nothing but this deafening uproar, and now the electric storms are terrific, the mists in descending from great heights, as its atoms combine, lose their surface capacity for retaining all of their Electrons; while at the same

CREATION

time these particles of mist having become large drops of water, in their long descent through and cutting the magnetic lines of force, act as generators, and consequently they advance to a point where all of these drops must discharge; and so these terrific lightning bolts are shot at the mountains, metals acting as an attraction; mountains are then ripped open, and torn apart; oceans rush down, only to be driven back, the lightning is incessant, the thunder one continuous roar, the human mind is staggered, and stands appalled at the awful war between the elements.

I now turn my attention to the little Protoplasmic Cells, one of which we have already seen, and notice some astounding peculiarities; first, as we have seen, each of these Nucleated Cells as science calls them, is a community, and consists of numerous systems, each system being composed of **LIKE ELEMENTS**, while the **SYSTEMS ARE UNLIKE EACH OTHER**, and each system may seek out other Ultimate Atoms like those of its own construction and add them to its own body; as each of the systems does this the community **GROWS**, and having reached a limit in doing this beyond which it will not pass, it divides itself into two parts, and each of these parts exist separately, and independently as did the parent cell.

These Nucleated Cells are not all alike, the varieties are numberless as far as science knows, and this is because each cell is constructed and arranged differently, and with differing amounts of different material in each of the different systems; in this way, the original cell is a **NEW CELL**, while the **DIVIDED CELLS ARE ALIKE**; these cells now cling or adhere to each other by a mutual attraction building up a **LIVING ORGANISM** called by science **Bacteria**.

In summing up the abilities of this wondrous cell, we find that it has inherent ability to originate itself by reason of its

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

systems, which in turn originate themselves from PREEXISTING MATERIAL; thus, these cells are automatically self-existing; they grow by reason of additions of necessary material attracted and accepted, and made use of, which is termed DIGESTION by science, and they are SELF PROPAGATING by division.

These cells are the beginning of the life of the Plant or Vegetable Kingdom of the Earth.

Contemporaneous with the evolution of this cell of the Vegetable Kingdom, appears another CELL FAMILY; it resembles the first Family in construction, existence, growth, and self-propagation by division, and while the systems of this latter Family are composed of similar elements, and the variety of cells like the former are numberless, they, unlike the former, act to a different end; these TWO FAMILIES OF LIFE CELLS are each of them controlled by a different power acting toward a different end.

These two families of cells have nothing to do with each other in forming a third family; each family exists by itself, although each system, or cell, will attract and steal away the contents of any other cell of either family, and use it for its own upbuilding, this depending on the inherent power of SUBJECTIVE AND RESISTANCE in these cells; and this latter Family is the beginning of the ANIMAL KINGDOM, and this opens the Fifth Epoch.

I now notice that the Earth is turning quite steadily in one direction, and on account of this, at the poles it has become quite cold; and in some depressions there has gathered considerable water, and some parts of it are quite cool, while in other places it is boiling and throwing up great clouds of vapor, which is again falling in a terrific storm of rain, hail, and snow, as it was quickly cooled in the awful cold atmosphere of the north.

CREATION

As the Earth now turns, its rotation is parallel to its orbital plane, so that the sun always shines directly on the equator, making it very hot, when coupled with its own internal heat; while at the poles there is no warmth from the sun, the only warmth is from its own internal heat.

Before the atmosphere was formed about the Earth, the sun's rays here were only light, merely a point of light on the Earth's surface; after this, the atoms of the atmosphere acted as a concentrating medium, causing these concentrated rays to reach the Earth as heat, but this was hindered much by the thick clouds of mist and dust.

I am particularly interested in the crystallization of the minerals of the Earth now; the endless variety of forms, and magnificence of colors are beautiful to the human eye; but I am more interested in the laws that technically control these conditions; the reason of the formation is due to the fact that spherical form of the primitive atoms becomes many sided through the internal attractive power being sufficiently great to draw these together, and eliminate all space between the atoms, while the particular form of any one crystal is due to radial magnetic lines of force acting from a central point; while the color is due to metal elements in the composition arranged while in the highest vaporous condition, both form and color being dependent on the natural arrangement of the elements assembling themselves in the beginning.

My attention is now directed again to the development of the Nucleated Life Cells of the two great families of the Earth; from the single Cell as we saw it long ago, each Cell has grown, and reproduced, by division, until numbers of these growing, working (digesting) and reproducing Cells, are living together, and working together in harmony as one, and this has formed a living organism called by science Bacteria and Amoeba; and

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

these are everywhere in countless myriads in the atmosphere and water. And now appears another condition; different Bacteria of different formation belonging to the same family are coming together and forming a new body; these all live and work together in perfect harmony, although each different system of Bacteria or Amoeba pursues its own way and method of construction, and these all together form a complex living organism, in both Vegetable and Animal families; and as these are too heavy to exist in the atmosphere, they live in the warm oceans of water.

Ages have passed, and now I see the lower forms of Algae; Diatoms have appeared; the warm sea is a living mass of little tiny vegetable and animal organisms, and they each are constantly adding new system cell parts to their construction and growing larger and more complex; the tiny animal organisms are taking the dissolved mineral elements Sodium and Potassium that have been washed out of the Earth by the rains and are held in suspension in the water, and by manipulation they are encasing themselves in it as a protection against depredations of others; not all do this, and these are the more easily destroyed; while at the same time those not encasing themselves, provide themselves with necessary appliances for seeking out and destroying their neighbors who are encased in this mineral material, to provide for the further progress of their own growth and development.

The history of Nature's progress is written in Creation's great epic, build to destroy, destroy to build.

While I have been taking note of these things, much time has passed, and as I return to the equator I find that many large pools of water are now forming on the surface, and steaming and boiling at a terrific rate, keeping dense clouds in the air all the time, and all the while it is one continual deluge of water from

CREATION

the air to the earth, all the time pouring down the mountain sides in terrific volumes, and bringing down the great masses of rock and debris which it grinds up and leaves in the depressions as it rises again in steam.

The Diatoms and Infusoria of long ago have now merged into the Coral, Sponge and relative organisms. The ocean bed is now covered with mountains of the cast-off mineral material used by these animaleulæ as a means of defense; these mountains are often blown up and overturned and ground to powder, or mingled with other mineral elements, and with the action and aid of fire and acids begin the formation of the Lime beds, and Laminated minerals, many of which are so beautiful and useful to man. The Algae has also kept pace with this condition, and the oceans are now a vast mass of marine growth, and this grows at a tremendous rate and falls back and is buried and under tremendous pressure and terrific heat is carbonised and becomes Graphite.

The raging of the elements across the Earth's surface prohibits anything from living out of the water, although I see glimpses of Mould in sheltered places on the rocks; the water, too, has absorbed and holds all of the Carbonic Acid Gas that it is capable of and there is a great blanket of it on the surface. All living animal matter must get its Oxygen from the water; so far, this sealife has been stationary, the organisms attaching themselves to surrounding objects or building to resist the powerful action of the water; but now in the more quiet places a few are developing a moving active life, going from place to place, and even approaching the pellagic limits of the water.

It is only possible through imagination to get any idea of the conditions as they are now on this Planet; human language fails to find words to do it credit, and the pen is unable to record in truth the awful grandeur and the terrific power shown. The

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

majestic beauty in the awful conflict between the elements now, can only be obtained from pictures drawn from the imagination ; Nature is now at work in good earnest, her instruments (fire and water) for creating, refining, and reconstruction, ever and always leading forward, and to some definite end, she handles with a precision that comes of absolute knowledge concerning her intentions, and she allows nothing to interfere.

I have noticed lately that some of the other Planets too, are cooling off ; I note instances where an atmosphere is being formed and appears as rings and clouds when viewed from the Earth ; in another the cascade of water is cutting great channels in the surface, as it is thrown up in mist and descends in vast cataracts of water, while the red hot lurid glow of this body is reflected from the overhanging mist.

I will try to draw a word picture of these conditions as I see them now. The Earth has cooled off at the poles so that there is no vapor arising, and all is quiet and cold, and frozen for a short distance about the poles. The Earth is a great magnet whirling in a sea or field of magnetic lines of force, and is now beginning to show its real nature. An enormous electric current has been set up flowing through the Earth from south to north, and back on the outside from north to south ; at the north pole where the pressure is the greatest, the electric display is marvellous.

The reason of there being such a display is because the Earth is travelling around the sun in an ellipse, and at a very high rate of speed ; it does not travel at the same rate of speed in all of its course, but as it nears the small radius of the ellipse it gains rapidly, and moves with terrible velocity ; and it slows down again as it moves away from this position to the long radius of the ellipse ; still the speed in all parts of its journey is so great that it is continuously raising its potential and silently dis-

CREATION

charging from the north, causing this electrical phenomena; while at its greatest rate of speed the display is magnificent.

A light rivalling that of the sun, at its brightest, displays itself in drapery folds, vast circles, streamers, and festoons in every color possible to describe; the larger part of the northern hemisphere is under this wonderful glow; as the Earth cools down, many vents are being left open for the benefit of the internal fires, there are many of these now scattered over the surface, and they are belching forth fire and clouds of material like ashes, and smoke, and steam; while rivers of molten matter run down the sides of the mountains; cracks are opening in the Earth and enormous bodies of water rush in, only to be vomited out of these volcanoes again in the mud and slime. This together with the water from the clouds is pouring down the sides of the mountains to find a resting place nearer to the axis of the Earth, only to be driven back again as fast as it comes; the roar is beyond human comprehension, the sun is darkened, the concussion in the atmosphere caused by the incessant explosions in the Earth, sounds as though the very Universe is being ripped to pieces, there is one continuous electric display in the lightning caused by the terrible rainfall, and this is continually striking the Earth, rending and tearing open great mountains, while the continuous roar of the thunder is dreadful; while one (humanly speaking) would look on these conditions with a fear and trembling, yet it would be awe-inspiring, for as yet there is nothing of life to be harmed, and Nature is building, in her own way, her beautiful structure without any fear of the consequences.

I am held entranced by this awful spectacle of Nature, but I know that something still more beautiful and wonderful will soon be set before me.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

I see great quantities of the debris that is being thrown from the volcanoes as ashes, fall into the water, and it is driven into great hills by the terrific storms of wind and water.

Ages now have passed, and Grapholites, Sponges, Brachiopods, Belamites and Trilobites have appeared; and Lead, Zinc, and Barite are being deposited; while deposits of Marble, Agate, and Onyx I find, that have been formed; while in many places the Mould that I saw so long ago has now become the first of the Unicellular plants on the surface of the land far above the water; Thallogens have appeared, and are growing to a great size; man never saw Bull-Rushes and Horse-Tails growing to a size larger than the biggest tree ever seen by him, and yet here they are. As Nature progresses in development, she does not entirely destroy the old formations, but leaves specimens as far as she can to be studied by man. These are some of the foot-prints on the sands of time. So, as I look at these big one-celled plants, I follow back and seek the Mould that I had previously seen.

This Mould was most peculiar, it looked like fine hairs made of dust, or ashes of an almost black color, closely matted together as plush or fur; I examined it closely to be sure that it was not some sort of metal dust held in place by magnetism, and I found that it had tiny roots or shreds holding it to the volcanic dust from which it got its sustenance.

I thought that most of the violent upheavals had gone by, when all at once an awful explosion took place, and I should judge that nearly one-third of the Earth was blown off, and to an enormous distance into the air; it turned completely over and came down and crashed into the Earth again nearly one-third of the way round the Earth from where it started; this caused the Earth now to turn about one-quarter of the way round, bringing what was previously the poles to the equator, and to start a new axis where the equator had been, and the effect was awful; great

mountains of rocks and ice were blown up into the air as pebbles, the ice melting and boiling, and being sent up in a huge cloud of spray, and falling again in volumes like seas, and in great cataracts tearing down whole mountains, and grinding the rocks to powder. For a very short period the electric display at the poles was quiet, but this was more than made up by the awful electric storms that now raged at the equator; this would shatter and crack the mountains; and all of this now caused terrible winds that would pick up great masses and hurl them about as pebbles, and the wind, rain, seas, and cataracts now piled up mountains of sand, gravel, and broken rock; this caused the Earth to become very irregular in its outline, and this irregularity caused a difference to appear in the attractive force from the Sun, causing it to still revolve slowly on its axis, although this axis now passes through it far from its center, so that a vast portion hangs to one side of it, with much less on the other, and the water now tries to get to this place, and the consequence is that very soon it grows cooler here where the water is, and great oceans and seas begin to form anew; while at the north and south, ice again begins to form, and the electric display again appears.

As it again begins to get more quiet, as the ages pass, I find Bryophytae and Pteridophytae in immense quantities: these mosses and lichens are in great abundance, variety, and size. Ferns have appeared.

In the water, the first forms of vertebrates have appeared, and sharks are plenty; and shell fish abound in enormous sizes, and variety, and some of these are occupying the pelagic line, or the land between high and low water along the shores caused by the attraction of the Moon on the water.

Ages after this, or returning from a long journey to the center of the Earth to note the conditions there, I noticed that the warmth of the Earth, with the humidity and gas, had caused

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

the small ferns of long ago, now to become of enormous size, growing quickly and falling, only to be replaced by others again and again; and these massive beds of vegetable matter are overturned time and again, and covered up beneath enormous quantities of marl, sand, gravel, and clay, and then subjected to a terrific heat beneath this weight, causing this vegetable matter to carbonise, and become solid masses of Coal.

It was not until now that I began to notice the new colors that had come into existence; up to this time everything had been black, very dark brown, or gray; now and then different colors in the formation of the rocks would appear, but in the dim light, and in an atmosphere filled with smoke and ashes, everything seemed like ashes; but as I examined the ferns I saw that they were of a very dark green, but in the shadows they appeared gray.

The water too, was filled with sediment brought down from the mountains, especially at the equator and in the vicinity, and this was more or less a dirty dark colored body of liquid, throwing up clouds of steam in all directions, and seething and roaring in awful tumult; too, it had gotten to be such a body now, that the Moon had a great influence on it, and waves mountain high would chase each other across its surface; while underneath this, the little Coral organisms that had covered themselves with a mineral coat, were reproducing at an enormous rate, and were still building up veritable hills, all under the water, and their wonderful variety of color, now and then seen, as the waves swept across them, appeared beautiful indeed in contrast with this dirty slimy water.

Terrible earthquakes take place continually, disturbing and distorting the surface of the Earth; large areas of matter are pushed up from below the water, bringing up great masses of Coral formations, and other contiguous creations, which are

ground to powder by the action of the water and rocks, and this in turn settles down and is covered up by ground-up rocks and sands, or ashes, and much of this is dissolved by the different acids, and in combination with other minerals, is transformed into beautiful varieties of stone, and precious minerals.

Many thousands of years have passed, I have been journeying about the Earth, and I will note the conditions again now. In the animal world, from the low order of shark-looking fishes, there have been evolved thousands of different kinds, and besides these, very large numbers of other sorts have been developed from other sources, and many of them of tremendous size; some are covered with scales, some with a sort of hair, and some with a hard tough bony skin, all showing in development the use made by these of the mineral covering of their early ancestors. Turtles, and peculiar sorts of very large sized shell fish exist, and many varieties of these are living different lives from the fish; they come out of the water to breathe, and live out of the water most of the time, although the carbonic acid gas is very dense, but the heavy winds break this up, and often along the wind-swept shores there are large areas where there is scarcely any, and here they can get the pure air to breathe; and yet they are able to get enough oxygen even though the gas is dense at times, as their movements are slow and sluggish, and the circulation of the blood very slow.

There is not much land out of the water as yet, where plant life can get a hold, on account of the heavy rains and stormy seas, but wherever anything can grow it is taking hold; the Earth is now much more quiet, earthquakes are frequent and numerous, and volcanoes are active; the solid crust of the Earth is getting quite cool in most places, and the sea water is warm or quite hot in places, but gets very cold north and south, but the boiling has ceased; ferns of very large size are plenty in secluded

places, and of great variety, these are growing up very quickly and falling back in great masses decaying, and heating, and fermenting, out of which new forms of life now appear developing into hundreds of thousands of different kinds of INSECTS, and new forms of Bacteria; this material is turned over and by the aid of heat and pressure becomes coal.

In all that I see about me now, I realize that everything is doing its best to reach the highest position that it is possible for it to attain, not that anything knows or realizes this, but it is the INHERENT INCLINATION, INTUITION, INSTINCT in everything created to aim to reach the highest attainable place, and in turn Nature aids by new combinations.

Man wonders how the Trilobite became the monstrous Shark, or the tiny Mould the great Cycas of the Coal Period; but the mystery ceases when he takes a step at a time, and does not jump over periods of hundreds of thousands of years; and yet, if one is in touch with Nature and closely following her ways, one may jump long periods of time and again find her still pursuing the same onward course, and this I shall do now.

Long long ages have passed, the waters have receded, and large areas of land are now out of the water, the deluge of rainfall is less violent, the carbonic acid gas has nearly disappeared, especially in high places, though it is still dense in the ravines and caverns; a new division of vegetation has appeared, the Gymnosperms, or cone-bearing plants; these are growing in abundance on the higher land and in the cooler places, while the monstrous ferns are still growing in the lower, damp, and warmer places, and these together with large deposits from this cone-bearing family are still adding to the great coal deposit; Nature through development is now about to leave the great Cryptogamous condition, and is pushing forward into the Spermatophytæ or seed-bearing plants.

CREATION

The atmosphere is quite clear from dust and ashes now, the air very humid and the sun heat very great over the equatorial belt, the mist clouds are very dense still, though the strong winds drive them back and forth and let the sun shine through often.

The fishes of long ago have step by step developed into monstrous creatures scarcely resembling fish; there is a large variety of animals living in and out of the water, such as science knows as Amphibians and Saurians, and some of these saurians live on the land altogether; there are also some other peculiar looking animals that live mostly in the big trees, they climb the trees and can jump from one tree to another by means of a sort of rude tail and wings, but these resemble the tail and fins of a fish more than anything else; from the fish of the ocean have been developed some enormous specimens that reproduce their kind alive, and not as heretofore by the oviparous method, these are the mammals of the sea as science knows the division; too, many of these have now become strange animals living mostly in the water, but congregating in great numbers on the shores and sleeping in the sun; these are covered with thick hair and they live near the ice line in the cold water; these are the beginnings of the great Seal family of man's day.

In my late journey to the centre of the Earth, I noted that Nature had seemingly finished her work as far as the crust of the Earth was concerned, it only remained to deposit a little more coal, and her storehouse is complete for the future, and so she is now pushing all living creation forward with giant strides.

And now I witness another condition I had seen and known long ago, from the germ cell forward to the latest development, that, both plant and animal life existed by devouring each other, but it seemed more appalling to me to see a number of these vast, huge, ungainly brutes engaged in a war to the death, simply to

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

satisfy desire ; many of these wars that I witnessed were terrible, no noise, save a few grunts, and ripping, stamping, snapping, snorting and crunching ; everyone an enemy to every other, and yet all this animal and vegetable life is reproduced through sexual attraction ; there are no limits in either kingdom, and plant or animal may cross with any other in the same kingdom that is of like family ; this is a continuation of the very first conditions of life.

And this is where Nature works the fastest.

In the valleys where it is cooler, north and south, where the rains have washed down the volcanic dust and ashes, the beautiful green of the cone trees in the clear atmosphere is a great relief to the bare, bleak, black rocks.

Near the equator, where it is hotter, the ferns have reached their limit ; the Cycas, or Palm Fern as man knows it, is here in all of its beauty, but between these ferns and the cone trees there has been developed a new plant that is just beginning to appear, and this is known to Botany as the beginning of the MONOCOTYLEDONOUS division ; this new plant resembles large ferns, that man calls Palms, and also there are smaller plants growing in the sand and ashes, that some of the animals will eat when they are hungry and have nothing else they can get ; and they seem to like it.

For a time I have been outside the Earth ; that is, I have been away outside of the atmosphere where I could view the Earth from a short distance away ; it is nearly absolute zero here, and noiseless ; the Sun is simply a ball of light, shining brightly but with no more heat than that of the moon. The influence of the Sun and Moon on the Earth's movable substances, such as the water and atmosphere, is plainly seen here. The atmosphere like the sea, feels the power most when both are nearly in a line in the same direction, and then it is piled up

CREATION

miles high, and these waves race around the Earth drawing up the hot air, while the cold air sweeps across the surface in terrific winds; the lifting power of these great waves is tremendous, and will at times reach down to the lower stratas of air on the surface, and lift up water in great volumes, also causing other disturbances in the powerful winds that shriek and howl with such violent fury over land and water. I can plainly see from here the many volcanoes scattered over the Earth still belching forth fire and smoke.

From here I visited the poles north and south; here I find a cold, frozen condition; life reaches to about 75 degrees on each side of the equator, but this is getting narrower as the water gets cooler; the great tumult that exists even now, keeps the warm equatorial waters distributed over a wide area; as this ceases during the ages, the frozen area about the poles becomes greater, although animals are developing that could live here if there were light enough, but it is nearly dark all of the time.

Reentering old well known places now, I see that the plants of the Coal Period are almost finished; a few ferns are left but not many. The Gymnosperm has now covered a wide area, and is still developing while the Monocotyledons, or the Palm and Grass family, is thriving at an enormous rate, especially in the temperate and hot climates.

A new division has been evolved since I was here last; from the previous existing vegetation has been developed the Dicotyledon of Botany, and I see many trees that man would at once know, such as Beach, Oak, Willow, Fig and Chestnut, and many shrubs belonging to the same division; all these varieties of vegetation now growing wherever they can find earth and climate. The basis of the life and sustenance of this vegetable world is the ground up lava and the ashes, together with the

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

dissolved minerals from the volcanic eruptions that have been spread by water.

It is very interesting to note, that while great strides have been made through crossing in the various families of plants and animals, yet this could not have been, nor could it have brought about the conditions that Nature intended, unless there had been other and more decisive laws at work; for instance, at different points in the history of creation and its development, when Nature needed to make a change in animal or vegetable life, she made a change in the mineral or gaseous elements, that had to do with their construction or living; the first of the marine animal life had no bones, because there was nothing to make bones out of; the primitive tiny microcosms of the sea gathered the crude minerals and converted these into materials that was subsequently used by a later, larger, and better developed creature; and by reason of better food, and these new minerals, this became a Vertebrate; in other words, as one plant or animal lived and died, it furnished material for a better one to follow. Then the time came when this was not enough; the Amphibians and Saurians lived in an atmosphere more or less filled with Carbonic Acid Gas; if that had continued, the race would have got no farther; but the gas disappeared, and a certain supply of Oxygen was furnished; these old monstrosities could not endure this, so they disappeared, and in their places came a new generation with better respiratory conditions, making better blood, and building a finer and more complex physical system; and what is true of the animal life, is true of vegetable life as well, for as these new elemental conditions arise in Nature's forward movement, new generations also of living GERMS or Bacteria appear, and are made use of as they are needed as new additions to already existing bodies.

CREATION

The great loathsome Amphibians of long ago are now nearly all gone, only a few small specimens are left; while the great ponderous, ugly, ungainly Saurians, having reached their height, are disappearing fast, and appearing in the place of these now is an entirely new development; the Mammals, or the crude representatives of the Herbiferous division of animals, are the outcome; they resemble in form and habit the Elephant, Rhinoceros, Hippopotamus, Ox, Camel, Giraffe, Moose and others of the period of man; the Reptilian creation is also here in all its power; monstrous Reptiles of all sorts and kinds, some without feet, some with feet, some with rudimentary wings; Snakes, Lizards and Bat-like monster animals; the great feathered division of Fowls and Birds is being developed from this Reptilian division; these are not all vegetarians, some live entirely on fish, others on insects. A third development is coming forward, evolved from the hairy water carnivorous mammal the Pinnipedia division, or the Seal of man's period; and being developed from these on land, there is a new type of carnivorous animal; man knows the offspring as the Bear, Monkey, Wolf, Lion and relatives; owing to climatic conditions and food especially, some of these crude specimens are developing tendencies to become partially Herbivorous, as also some of the Herbivorous division are finding it necessary and agreeable to eat some animal food; and when any two of these estranged specimens unite, as they are able to do in any one of the three great divisions, as the Carnivora with the Herbivora of the same division, there then is produced another specimen, alike or unlike either parent, or combining the qualities of both, this depending on the percentage of variation in the parents.

The active brain power qualities that Nature is now pushing forward is very noticeable in these three great divisions. The Herbivorous animal as a rule is slow to act at the behest of

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

instinct, though some are more bright than others, but this is through timidity of the other divisions more than anything else, as all of these divisions are at enmity with the others, and the vegetarian is the least protected against destruction, being less aggressive, from the preying proclivities of the Carnivorous division. The Reptile is very slow, cold-blooded, and with very little brain power; Fowls are quick but with very little brain power, and so they fall a prey to the Reptile, their parent and inveterate enemy, through timidity, and dumb terror on sight of the enemy. The Carnivora developing from the Seal division are the quickest and brightest of all of the animal creation; though with small brain power generally, they are quick to respect instinct's hints, and this places this division above all the others in instinctive qualities.

There have been terrible unheavals through the late ages, and great masses of sea life have been destroyed excepting a few specimens; such as the Belemites, Crinoids, Ammonites and Coral; and great masses of these have been ground up and formed into mountains of Chalk; some of these have remained underground and have been formed into beds of Coquina, and Marl, and Diatomaceous Earth; the ground-up-Trap of the early ages was mostly formed into Slate through the sedimentary deposits, but of late, the powdered Trap, Talc, Schists, and Shales, and other igneous amorphic rocks have been deposited as Clay, Silt and other micaceous sedimentary deposits by the rains and mountain streams.

I can plainly see now that Nature has but little more to do in her Mineral Kingdom; a few ages more and she will be done, so that now she is pushing the Vegetable Kingdom to the limit at enormous paces; and in the Animal Kingdom she is pushing forward and bringing the physical animal body in every department to a high degree of perfection; she works first in one

CREATION

direction and then in another, bringing out in each animal some new development that she is going to make use of later on.

Insect life is now abundant. Flowers have appeared, and are attracting insects of various kinds, and fruit of various kinds, besides seeds and roots, are furnishing subsistence for many of the animals. Varieties of Birds are plenty, and a large number live mostly in the trees, though a few live on the rocks and in the water.

The Air, Water and Land are now teaming with life of all kinds, and how different it is now from what it was when I first saw it ages ago! The atmosphere is quite clear; the carbonic acid gas is all gone; the sun shines through the clouds frequently; powerful winds, rains, earthquakes, volcanic eruptions, and sea and ocean tumult, besides terrific fresh water streams that are tearing down the mountains and hills, still exist.

Instead now of following in detail the progress of Nature during the last three million years, I find myself viewing creation when the Mammalian Age has reached its height; I am now looking out upon an earth clothed with a beautiful vegetation, the air is pure, the seas and oceans are filled with life, and on land the forests, hills and valleys abound with all sorts of beautiful animals, flowers and fruits, fragrance, beauty, and the voice of song, satisfaction, terror, or opposition that would delight or terrorize the human senses if such were here.

The terrific tumult of the elements has now subsided to a very great extent. Nature has practically ceased her work of establishing the Mineral Kingdom, and this closes the Third Epoch in the history of creation.

The great animals of long ago have all gone, the last, the great Reptiles, have disappeared, a few small struggling specimens only of these ages of the past are now left.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

Many large animals of the Mammals, such as science knows as the Mammoth, Mastodon, Rhinoceros, and Hippopotamus, still exist, while smaller undeveloped animals such as man knows as the Ox, Horse, Deer, Sheep and Rabbit of the Herbivorous division are here, and each with a long train of relatives; with the Carnivora it is the same, the Lion, Tiger, Wolf and relatives are in abundance, while a number of animals that are both animal and vegetable eaters have been developed, such as the crude representatives of the Simian family, including a wondrous variety of the Monkey tribe, while the Bear family too has a long line of relatives.

The Vegetable Kingdom is now one mass of luxurious vegetation, each plant struggling with the other to live, grow, and reproduce its kind; this equatorial belt is now a little narrower than formerly and vegetation does not extend as far, although the sea Carnivora as well as some land Carnivora and Fowls live far beyond this line, but these still live mostly in the region where the light is very dim; in the really dark area no life exists, except as it is driven there or goes on excursions.

The Monocotyledonous division of plants is now spread over the whole land, furnishing seeds and fruits for the subsistence of the myriads of fowls and other animals that need it. The Dicotyledonous division is also now with its almost countless varieties bringing forth fruit and roots for the great flourishing Animal Kingdom; while the Cone Bearing division is now being pushed to the cooler limits of vegetation. The exceeding great numbers of the Herbivorous division of animals is now flourishing almost beyond computation, and it is only held in check by the Carnivora; and although these multiply and flourish, yet their great ferocity and enmity to each other keeps them reduced.

Instinctive qualities through brain development have progressed through two million years to a high plane; Nature has

CREATION

had in view during this time the development of reproduction; and it has arranged this in the highest possible places for the production of all that the times, conditions, and food could possibly bring forth, that she might develop an animal with a larger and better, though complex, brain capacity, that it might respond more quickly and efficaciously to the instinctive impulses directed to it by her from without; and she has done this in the Simian family. This family is smart, active, and alert, and is far beyond and above all other animals; it is neither Carnivorous nor Herbivorous, but combines them both, and at the same time is neither entirely aggressive, nor is it terror stricken in timidity.

Nature is practically through with her great evolutions in the Vegetable Kingdom, Botanical orders are already established, genera, species, and variety continue to develop slowly as occasion affords, so the Vegetable Kingdom, or the Fourth Epoch, will close here, and I shall confine my especial attention to the Animal Kingdom and its development.

The Earth is still turning on its axis slowly; the days and nights are of long duration, there is really only one great Continent, with numerous inland seas and great rivers, there are numerous small islands scattered about outside near to this continent, but no large body, and the land lies about equally distributed north and south of the equator. As the climate varies in either way north or south from the equator, the difference in the class of vegetables and animals is easily noticed, as these have acquired through a long habitat natural established features; but these are not alike in the same latitude on both sides of the equator, nor do they cross the line but keep fairly close to their own climate and food conditions; consequently, scattered through an area from 35-45 degrees north in a belt across this continent in a number of places are large herds of the Simian family of a great variety of animals of exceedingly strong powerful build,

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

and very ferocious, while others are very small and less fierce; and these cross and recross amongst themselves bringing forth new types; but all are of the same plan, and developing new tendencies and qualifications; they are different from all other animals in that owing to their build they are able to firmly grasp anything with each of their feet as in climbing or fighting; the smaller ones are very agile, and live mostly in the trees out of the way of the other animals that would prey on them; they live principally on seeds, fruits and insects; the larger ones kill and eat small animals, or if a large one is killed in a fight, they eat it. Only a few of the larger types are very aggressive, and these do not molest other animals very much; but if others come too near, or attempt to molest them, or interfere, or to seek them as prey, then they fight to the death; and though they get mangled in an engagement with some of the more powerful Carnivora, yet in the end any other animal so engaged in a battle, will be torn to pieces, as the strength and ferocity of these is tremendous; so it is that most of the animals of the forest respect them, and through instinct do not molest them very much, except when hungry. They all walk about as other animals, but stand erect when seeking fruits and seeds, or when in combat they rise upon the hind feet and grasp with the fore paws; the Bear family does this to some extent; though it cannot grasp anything in the forepaws, these will squeeze a combatant to death in a death hug, while the former will tear the limbs from the body; in fact this is so peculiar an animal that I shall watch it carefully.

During these late ages, and even now, there are terrific inundations, and water breaks from the great rivers and seas inland; and often during the night these will take place, destroying large numbers of animals that are caught, burying them to great depths in the alluvial deposit.

CREATION

The conditions on the Earth's surface have altered but little, excepting as the rains and storms, and a few volcanic disturbances have from time to time made a little difference; I shall only note it, and turn my attention to some of the better specimens of the family Simidae that I have previously noticed some fifty thousand years ago. This animal now is still just as powerful physically as before, but the head is different; it is a little larger, but the animal seems to have a slight reasoning power, showing that the brain is developing in quality. They walk upright more frequently and more easily than before, although a good portion of the time with them is spent on all four feet; there is less hair on some of them in the warmer places where they live, than formerly; other peculiar physical characteristics have not altered much. They herd by themselves, each species or variety by itself, and the males treat the females with the same deference and care as is characteristic of all of the animal kingdom; the males will fight amongst themselves, and the females amongst themselves though not hard or often, although the females one and all will fight like fury when bereft of their young. I noticed a short time since one of these monstrous powerful Apes climbing over some rocks; he had picked up a small dead tree that had fallen, and was using it as a sort of STAFF to lean on as he clambered over the great rocks; I also saw him pull up some vegetable to get at the sweet roots to eat; I saw him repeat this several times, trying many and throwing them away, until he found the one he was looking for. It is more apparent that many of this family die of disease than of any other, as in the other families they are mostly killed either by the elements, or by other animals; but as this family is more or less feared and respected by the others, they live longer and contract germ diseases of various kinds as they get less physically strong and unable to resist these disease germs.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

The Earth now has certainly grown to be a beautiful place; the vegetable world is producing a wondrous variety of fruits, grains, and roots for the Animal Kingdom, and they are revelling in it. Plants and animals have crossed and recrossed until the Earth is filled with almost countless numbers of these varieties, and each and all are pushing forward striving to get farther, be better, and be more useful to Nature, but none of these realize this. It is all accomplished in the plant through instinct by outside influence acting on the central cell formations, producing desire in each of these central cells of the thousands of different cell systems, which must be satisfied in seeking and appropriating the necessary elements; in the animal, these outside influences acting through the central cells of the brain centre, constitute what is known as instinct here, a power the primal end of which is connected directly with the Infinite Power and Law of Nature, while the Finite end of this Power is the VIBRATING INFLUENCE of desire in this great central Telephone Station of the Animal Kingdom; so that, looking at creation from the Infinite Side, in order that development shall go forward, and satisfy the demands of Nature in time and quality, it is dependent on Nature to first furnish the necessary active power to produce this, and the necessary receptive conditions in the plant or animal to heed the requests and fulfill the requirements; and the plant or animal responds through physical desire, leading through the satisfaction of sexual desire by frequent crossing, the use of better food, and more conducive environment.

And now again, I notice that as these plants have become so much better and finer, and more complex in structure, and produce better food, this animal Ape that I observed fifty thousand years ago, has now become an entirely different being; the species that I am now watching of this family, now walk uprightly almost without exception, and these are respected and

feared by all the other animals, because of their terrific power and ruthless ferocity when molested; these are less hairy than formerly, and much less so than the others that quite resemble them but have much less brain power; these animals can and do now go about rather stupidly reasoning where they want to go and why, and have little or nothing to do with any of the other animals about them; they are Omnivorous, living on fruit, roots, berries, seeds, insects, fish, and small animals; if they are hungry, they will seek such food as they like, rejecting any other; if sick, they will sit in the sun and try to get warm, and if cold and very sick they will find some cavern or hole and hide in it to die away from their enemies; these will frequently search for, and take up a big stone or club to aid them in killing another or in self defense; and as I view these different groups of the family scattered about, they seem to reason in their way that their condition is quite satisfactory, and they seem quite contented.

Fifty thousand years have again passed, and I am still watching the progress of this animal Ape in the different groups; they differ slightly in accordance with the kinds of food they get, and their environment; otherwise these groups are very much alike; the members of the different groups have heretofore remained by themselves, apart from the others, and not crossing the intervening distance between the neighboring groups, but now they are doing this, and even going long distances, the males especially, and mating with those of another sort; these species have now grown to be more monogamous than formerly though not entirely so now; while they are not greatly polygamous in their sexual relations, yet the males usually have a number of females that they hold as belonging to each of themselves, and these they watch over and protect from others, while the females seem to regard this as the proper condition, and will not leave one male for another unless in exceptional cases.

These animals now walk uprightly altogether, never on all four feet; the hind feet, too, have changed; the thumb or great toe is not now opposed to the other fingers or toes on the same foot, so that they now can only grasp anything with the forepaws, or hands; and the forepaws or arms too, are much shorter now; the skin is yellowish white, the hair black, and very scarce except in spots on the body; the face is entirely changed, and shows great mental development; they are not as large or powerful as formerly, as they use mental power to outwit their enemies now; too, they will lay aside all enmity amongst themselves now and join together and fight for food or in self-defense; they try to help each other in a feeble way if one is sick or disabled, in bringing food or water, and will place another in the sun when it is sick and cold.

The females nurse the young with great care, as the young are now much more feeble and helpless than formerly, when it required only a short time for these to become strong and to be able to care for themselves; but now it requires a long time before a little one can take care of itself at all, and during this time, the mother becomes very much attached to it; the fathers pay but little attention to the young, though they will protect them, and will often play with them, when the little ones are playful, and knock them about roughly when the young ones are too mischievous; but the young as a rule go with and watch the older ones and quickly learn their ways, while these young, too, will often get together and form new designs of their own, and carry them out without the knowledge or help of the older ones; it is not an infrequent thing for large numbers of both male and female adults to formulate a plan and make an excursion into some neighboring district to secure some coveted vegetable food, or to combine to kill some other animal that they want for food; they have a variety of sounds that they make to indicate different

passions, as fear, hunger, thirst, opposition, or desire in any form; they will also imitate the sounds of other animals as a decoy, and also to make themselves better understood amongst themselves; direction, condition, time, sense and other needful things to know and communicate, are made known by gesture; they perceive quickly, and reason slowly yet significantly; all other species of the same family are now entirely separated from these and remain as they were thousands of years ago; too, there is a marked difference now in the young generation as it grows up; these do not all follow in the direct path of the older ones; quite often there will be one that will act very independently and will make attempts at something entirely different from the others; quite recently I saw one that had fastened a big stone to a stick and was using it as a weapon; also in another instance I saw one using a long stone as a pestle and pounding up some seeds and nuts, so that they could be eaten more easily, as this one had bad teeth; and the others watched these, and often made use of the same methods; and I even saw one that had fastened a sharp stone in a long heavy stick and had thrown it with such accuracy and force that it penetrated and killed a large animal; and this one was held as superior by the others and they treated him with deference and respect; and again a little later I saw one engaged in scratching on a smooth stone with another and harder stone what was supposed to be the outline of some animal, and there were a number watching him and wondering at his ability; they are not afraid of water, and will go in and swim and catch fish; but they are afraid of fire; they cannot connect the warmth of the Sun and fire together; they enjoy the warm sunshine especially after a long, dark, rainy night when they have been obliged to gather and lie close together in order to keep warm; they know that fire is warm; but they have seen its ravages and destruction, and in some instances some of their number have been killed by

volcanic outbreaks and strong wood fires, so that they dare not make use of it, although I have seen them, where a log was smouldering, get up in the night and go and sit beside it to get warm; but if it snapped, sputtered, or started to blaze quickly, they would run off quickly, they would pick up a piece of burnt wood or charcoal and rub this on the rocks, and wonder at what they had done, even making an attempt at sketching or outlining something; in one instance I noticed that as one of them was doing this, he intimated to the others that it was all water above them, and that all of the water around them came down from there, and he made a symbol on the rocks to represent this, and the others remembered it; and they asked him for symbols for other things, as fire, rocks, different animals, day and night and one of themselves, and he found symbols for these; so these have now the basis of thought transfer by crude signs, or gestures writing, or symbolic and oral language.

Twenty thousand years have now passed since I saw these last conditions; this Ape family has now become a numerous one, and the groups are allied and have dealings with others across the continent, though they are still factional, and more or less aggressive; the Apelike proportions have disappeared a good deal and they are very upright, strong, and powerful as a rule, although there are many weak and pigmy ones; their language both oral and sign has developed very much, their inclination toward invention has increased, and they have now many implements made of stone and metal that they find in the rocks, which they use for domestic purposes, for weapons of war and defense, and to kill for food; they are exceedingly acute and cunning, using remarkable skill and wit in all dealings with other animals, and amongst themselves; they are much afraid of fire, but they have become adepts in using the charcoal to make symbols of things and conditions that they wish to communicate; they think

they know ways of circumventing or outwitting their enemies, but they have no way of dealing with a destructive fire, hence they feel that it is superior to them, and sometimes they will eat charcoal thinking that it will act as a deterrent in some way, as they have found out that when sick (as they believe) from eating certain wrong things, they can eat certain other herbs and get better, and these are tried sometimes with right results, sometimes with wrong; and sometimes when some of the fierce volcanic outbreaks take place, they become terror stricken, and will even throw one of their number into the flames, thinking that this will save the rest from destruction.

I have now been wandering about for ten thousand years since my last visit to this place, and now I see some wonderful changes; the animal and insect worlds have been raised to a place where they are truly wonderful; the old great cumbersome Mastodon and Mammoth are all gone, the largest animals are now the Elephant, the Rhinoceros, Elk, the Hippopotamus, large Tigers, some large Snakes, and some very large Birds.

The Primate Ape is now a big powerful, wonderfully ingenious BIPED, keen, cunning, and mentally superior to all else; he now, instead of living in holes and under rocks, makes holes or caves, or rooms, in the soft rocks that he cuts out with metal implements, and he now uses different metals that he finds in the rocks and sand, principally copper, besides hard bits of stone for domestic, aggressive and defensive purposes.

While the different groups across the continent communicate with each other, they do not have things in common, for as one tribe feels its superiority it will try to subdue another; in this way only the stronger survive, and the potential mental ability is developing to a high plane; intelligence shows itself in thought, word, and action; the face has now lost most of its animal ferocity, and with the young and females, I can see pity, affection,

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

hatred, and terror sharply outlined in the features at intervals, they now bury their dead in a constructed hole in the soft earth in some place they use for this purpose alone, and with these they bury such things or implements as were used by the dead party when alive; they do not all do this, some place their dead on elevated racks or mounds out of the way of wild animals, thereby thinking to help them to return to a condition from whence they came, for most of them think they came down (or from up) and out of the water; for as far as they know, they believe themselves to be superior to all else, so they can only think they came down from above, and as that is all water to them, they necessarily came out of the water.

The young are now very feeble and helpless when born, and it requires a long time and great patience to care for them, and when neglected they will cry very piteously; fathers do not interfere, and seem helpless to help, and mothers are frequently careless and indifferent, and even cruel, but usually affectionate; the members of each tribe now talk quite intelligently with each other, and the signs are written, studied, and added to by many in each tribe until they now form a complex achievement.

I note a wondrous thing, now; up to this time they have had nothing to do with fire, but one of them, more intrepid than the rest, believed that he could use it, and it would not be hurtful, so he tried it, while the others predicted all sorts of disasters would happen to him; but when after a time he had made use of it in his stone house where he would carry it, and bits of wood to replenish it, and keep him warm through the long dark nights, and nothing happened to him, the others tried it with like results, and this began to make them think that it was not so superior after all; they had subdued it, and now it was subject to them, and they then sought about making it do other things for them, and they soon discovered that by the use of it they

CREATION

could work certain metals, and they could burn and sharpen sticks that they would use as spears, and make torches by which they would hunt, fish, and war at night, and they found they could fashion domestic vessels of clay and by fire make them strong and hard, and it was in this way they discovered and by accident, that they could cook certain things which would thus be more palatable.

Again, many thousands of years have elapsed since this Primate discovered the use of fire, and discovered that he could cook food, and that it was sometimes better when so cooked.

And now I shall relate more slowly the conditions and progress during the thousands of years that follow this, because these are becoming more complex, during shorter periods of time.

First, the reason why this species of this family has been able to raise itself so far above its relatives, is because Nature equipped it with a brain to do it; the story is always the same, from the beginning to the end, in the life of the organic world; by adding a new cell structure to the brain already developed, by way of new food, causing this alteration, she equipped one or a few in the beginning, and thus through the centuries raised the standard; this is the one great reason why the sides of the path back through to the beginning are strewn with those which have been left behind; this was no fault of theirs, they were not equipped in the beginning, it was not time, it was not necessary.

Nature picked the best, and endued it for further progress, till it should be laid aside; Nature keeps on hand the little microcosms, or elements or evolution-elevating-jack-screws (if you will) that she has used in the past, and she can and may use them again if she needs to; she reproduced in the beginning by division of the parent, she still does so though in a more complex manner, although in the Oviparous, and the Viviparous methods, a third is evolved from two in combination, while in the Ovovip-

arous, the primitive condition is adhered to, and no progress can be made, as the original parent is only and alone represented.

Nature does not intend to go, or revert back; she always moves forward, yet she may introduce a primitive condition, or pre-existing plasmatic cell, at any time, in any place, in any future work to facilitate her work; she alone can do this, as the created object is ignorant and helpless.

It is always well to remember that all so-called violent changes, such as evolutionary steps taken by Nature in the past, are only apparent, and not really so; Nature had been preparing for ages for any one of these, and man only sees the sharp difference afforded by the contrast between the past and present; Nature adds a new microcosmic cell at any point, when she sees that it is necessary and will extend her work.

The Road through the past is strewn with monstrosities as viewed by man; those not wanted Nature has destroyed, others she retained but stopped their development, as they would be useful in the future as food or for other purposes; Nature begins to take a new step in evolution long before the end of the old condition has appeared, and the firm establishment of the new thrusts the old to one side.

Nature has at this time, in this Primate Ape, superimposed the THREE GREAT BRAIN CENTRES of the present upon the past, and the past upon the remote past, each centre taking long, long ages to construct and develop, and so she will not destroy these, but build above them, and she may use them if she needs to.

During the last few thousand years, because of disease, and accidents resulting from earthquake upheavals, volcanic disturbances, and violent storms of wind and water, and exposure to the elements, and the ravages of wild beasts, and wars, all of the weaker groups or tribes have disappeared, leaving only a

CREATION

large strong tribe, which occupies many well populated villages scattered over a wide area in the central eastern part of the continent. The position is about where Persia and the Arabian Desert are to be in the 19th. century geographical maps, but this position is much nearer the equator now, than the maps will represent it later. This tribe is very strong in numbers and physique. In the early part of the history of this tribe, they made frequent incursions into other tribes, they crossed with them, and carried off many; this helped to deplete the weaker ones, and it strengthened themselves, and in this tribe now are many who are not only mentally far above the others but are monster physical giants, of beautiful structure and physique.

The simple matter of cooking food is now working a wondrous change in this Primate Ape, it was a long time before they found out what to cook, and how to cook it, and how not to cook other kinds of food, and even now they do not understand it; they cannot conceive what the fire does to it, but it makes it better, and they now also remember hearing how their ancestors were afraid of fire and would not touch it or use it to warm themselves, or cook with, and they cannot understand this; they think that those before them must have been much like the Monkeys which live in the trees now.

But the centuries pass, and the knowledge of cooking and of eating cooked food has become a necessity for the internal construction of this animal now; and this has caused a great difference in the whole animal structure, producing a finer and more complex physical organism, with much better brain abilities than before, and because of this we note, first, that language both oral and written, is moving forward fast, and complex formulated ideas are born; these think, reason, and come to definite conclusions, concerning any subject in question.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

Of course these are not all equally advanced ; some think and reason more than others, some in one direction, and some in another ; things and conditions, and life and death, are the subjects about which they wonder and question.

I am now watching one young creature of superior stature and mental ability ; he is noticeable anywhere, and all the others of his village or district seem to like and respect him ; he is a dual type both male and female, complete in himself though not fully developed as yet ; the others know of this but it does not trouble them, they think and reason that this makes him superior to them, and so they respect him ; at present he has all the qualities and bearing of both male and female, and because of this and the attitude of the others, he acts in a dignified and superior manner, and yet is gentle and pleasant ; he is a wonder to himself, as well as to the others, and accepts his condition as being better than that of the others but cannot understand it ; since nothing of this kind has occurred before, so far as these know, he feels this condition to be an honor, and as the years pass by, he becomes very strong and large in stature ; he also learns rapidly and is mentally quick and strong. He thinks a good deal and advises others, he learns to write the sign language, hunts, and fights ; he likes to have the younger ones about him while he tells them stories, or teaches them how to make spears or bows, and shows them how to strike a fire by means of metal and stones, if they cannot get it elsewhere ; his face is different from the others, the eyes are not as oblique, but more in a straight line across the face, and they are larger, and his skin is not as yellow as the others ; he has no father or mother as they died in neighboring tribes, and he was taken by these during a raid in the interior.

For quite a long time now, many of the inhabitants of these villages have been getting sheep and goats and other kinds of animals and keeping them within bounds, for the meat and milk,

CREATION

and they have also discovered that they can plant certain seeds and roots and have them grow nearby, and get them when grown for food, and this one in whom I am interested is doing this in the place to which he has retired, as a relief from being lonesome. And he lives apart from the others a great deal, and often he is journeying about and living in caves, and he goes about visiting the other tribes; he is very peaceable, and all seem to respect him; and he seems to be like the rest only he is given to thinking a great deal; he seems to know all that the best of the others know, but he acts as though he were always trying to find out something by listening to the others; he seems to have something on his mind that he is always pondering deeply, and he does not seem to want to speak to the others about it; this was so peculiar that I noticed it in particular, and a sensation showed me the reason.

He had been pondering deeply over the DREAMS that he had had when asleep, and he could not explain them, and he found that the others had them too, and wondered about them, but they had no explanation; and as time passed by he became a fully developed being, with a thoughtful dignified mien; and he now lived almost wholly by himself far separated from all the others in the beautifully located spot that he had chosen, to which he would retire, and where he had some herds, and a crude garden.

There were two reasons for this: first, he could not understand why he was as he was, because now as he was fully developed he strongly felt the desire for a mate, but he had no more desire for a male than a female, and at the same time he was physically unable to act the part of both alone: too, he had of late years been dreaming a great deal and pondering over it and many of the picture visions that he had, I saw; there would appear to him a being similar to himself, and this being would talk with him and tell him how he was his creator, and he caused

him to understand how he had made all the earth, and the sun, moon, and stars, and all the water, trees and animals; and he thought so much about this and his talks with this strong friendly being, that he would long for him often when sitting alone; and then this being would appear, and they would talk together; one day as he was lonesome, and wished for his wonderful friend, he came, and they talked, and this being said to him, "As I am your creator, I am able and will give you power and authority over everything else if you will do as I wish you to do.

"I will give you all the trees, animals, and everything that there is, and you may do as you will with it; you have always done as you would, and no one like myself has ever stopped you, but now if you wish to be one with me, there is one thing that you must not do: There is a certain tree that I will show you, of which you must not eat the fruit. All the rest is yours, and whenever you want to know anything, I am near you when you wish it."

As this being ended his talk, the other was very happily astonished, and in his great happiness his whole being responded in acceptance of this great responsibility. And at once there appeared a soft pleasant light, that wrapped itself around this animal, and he came to himself, and now he is a HUMAN BEING.

Instinct and Reason are the names given by man to interpret the meaning of the two conditions, Irresponsibility, and Responsibility in the Animal Kingdom; until Nature accepts an animal as being responsible for itself, it exists under outside guidance and control, and the compulsory acceptance of this is Instinct, and the animal is irresponsible; but when this animal arrives at a time, place, and condition, when it is accepted by Nature as having become sufficiently perfected to be responsible for itself, then, while the outside influence still continues, and this being may

choose one of two conditions placed before him to follow, then he becomes responsible, and his conclusions and determinations for doing as he does are based on Reason.

The Sixth Epoch now begins.

Nature has gathered together all of the very best that she has accomplished through the past ages, and has offered it to the Creator, and it has been accepted, and sealed as being sufficient, and now she begins an entirely different work in her forward movement.

The Animal Kingdom has reached its height in its general physical structure, although a continued physical refining process will still be carried out as the mental equipment needs it.

A Human Being; a wondrous conception, and a marvellous creation: Sealed by the Creator Himself in being clothed in the very same Power Light; and as he has been told by his Creator that he was made out of the earth beneath his feet, so he has been named ADAM.

And so this close relationship goes on between God and Man, and Man is now constantly learning direct from his Creator, and as time goes by he discovers to himself the Light Garment that has been thrown about him, and the authority that is his, and he is more than satisfied with it all, yet it tells him that this is the proof of the fulfilling of the promises made to him in the past by his Creator whom he now calls JA.

He does not use this power for selfish purposes, but it is noticed by the others; the tribe of which he was one once, now fears and respects him, as they too see that something abnormal has occurred, and so they keep away from him; in fact they are dispersing themselves into far and remote regions to get away from him, and in doing so are becoming destroyed in various ways; the wild animals will not molest him, but keep away, while the more domesticated sorts will appear more friendly,

but they one and all notice him particularly wherever he goes, and although he has much to occupy his mind, yet even in this new condition he is still very lonesome, especially as his former associates have gone farther away; so he talks with Ja about it, and while Ja does not tell him all that will take place in the future, He tells him to again look over his former associates and see if there is any one whom he wants. Hence, because many of the others have heard about him and his new condition, they venture to come in large curious bodies to get a look at him; he sees them, and speaks to them, and calls them by the old familiar calls; but they are one and all afraid of him, and he sees none that would satisfy him; and as they at last leave him, he tells Ja about it, and how lonesome he is as there is none like him, and he is alone, and a very great desire comes over him for another one like himself.

Later, while he was sitting in this melancholy manner in the entrance to a small cave in a rock, I saw that he went to sleep in a weary burdened way, and that at once a strong radiant mist of powerful light thoroughly surrounded him and protected him; a sensation tells me to enter this condition and note the work of development; so I enter and now I will relate what I have not done before, because it would have made the simple walk through the past more complex.

Not only in this place, but everywhere, the whole Universe is filled with active, living, individual servants, or workmen of God; there is no place where they are not, these are all tried and trusted beings who have passed through other physical conditions and have been accepted into the spiritual world to work for God; and here they are now in innumerable numbers awaiting a sensation or command to do a special work. These have no dimensions or physical qualities, they are Individual Miniature Conditions of Infinite Power fitted for this especial

CREATION

physical work of every atom in this created physical combination; they have an absolute knowledge; one or many may be given work to develop that may require unlimited lengths of time, or they may be required to do the same work in an instant, it matters not to them, length of time is no object; these are the Angels of which man knows little and but a little, and they may appear in any form or condition, in the Earth or elsewhere; or speak to men in a vision, or create a dream or vision picture, so as to appear to man when the brain is unoccupied in sleep, and make known things that are necessary for man to know.

Now, all at once a sensation is received, and each of these millions of workmen attack the task before them.

The Man Adam is lying on the ground asleep, when instantly every part of him is taken to pieces, so quickly was it done that in an instant he had disappeared; and now again these as quickly begin reassembling, but now they are constructing two bodies instead of one; all that belonged to the male has been fashioned into a single body, and the female part into another body, adding extra necessary material to each; this is death without the destruction of the physical body; in all other deaths previous to this, the body was destroyed, and the individual-power-tenant returned in another body.

Now, I am speaking relatively when I use the term "instantly." This transaction, in time limits, required a long time until it was completed; and during this interval I was interested in many things, but upon my return, I saw this man Adam just emerging from the cave with the same light around him, but entirely changed, not quite as large, and a fully developed Male Human Being; and as he came out, he appeared as though he had been asleep for a long period, but as he awakened he began to examine himself, and he saw at once the great change that had been made. But how? and what for?

This was a most astonishing thing, but he was hungry and thirsty; so that satisfying these desires, he pondered over this thing for a long time, and he saw by signs about him that he had been asleep a long time. But what could it mean? He now appeared to himself as he remembered the others did of long ago. But where was the other part of him? And he was still shrouded in light, so that this made him think, "I will ask Ja." Now, as he was thinking this, Ja appeared, and with a Female, a Human Being, a Woman, and shrouded in light as himself, and Ja told Adam that this was the other part of him that had been taken away while he was asleep, and that this was to be his mate, and then left him.

Now, Adam had never touched Ja as he had others about him, although through the past many years, he had seen and talked with him so much; Ja did not seem to him to be of the same sort of material as himself, and he could not understand it, but let it alone; so now, in his dazed condition he thought, "Perhaps this one is like Ja, and not like myself?" So he touched her, and this demonstrated to him that it was all as Ja had said; she did not seem to be afraid; and then he spoke to her and she answered him; all, everything that had previously been known to Adam, was now known between these two, nothing had been lost.

And now they became interested in each other, and although he had been told by Ja, and also knew of himself, the origin of this woman, and she knew too; yet he asked her where she came from, and she said, "From above." Now, in the past, these both in Adam, as well as the others of that time, knew of the birth of the animals, and yet they all persisted in thinking that there was a previous condition in which each and all came from above. So now, as she said this, it was only a reverting to the past, and so he called her EBE, or water, or out of the water above.

CREATION

It is exceedingly interesting to watch these two powerfully built giant human beings, as they get interested in each other, in their simple animal-like ways. They seemed to know each other, and yet they seemed strange to each other too. They journeyed through the beautiful fertile valley where they stayed, and they lived on fruit and seeds and roots, and all such things as they liked were near at hand. They talked of Ja, and each knew Him as did the other. They caught fish, and they found a small cave, and made this to suit them as a place of shelter from the storms; they did not try to keep any of the animals such as sheep or goats about them, or to have any sort of garden near them, as they were only two, and there was more than plenty provided for them in the valley, although they remembered how in the former days the others used to have many herds and gardens. But these were many then, and where are they now? And these two are contented and satisfied, and not lonesome as the time passes by, even though they are only two, and Ja often comes and talks with them, and tells them what they may eat, and what not; and again and again he warns them not to eat of the fruit of a certain tree, LEST THEY DIE, even as He had told them in the beginning.

After one of these talks with them, when Ja had gone, they talked about what He had said as they were going about after food; they continually ate of the tree that Ja had told them about, and they knew that if they ate of it, they would not be hungry and would not die, and they were satisfied with it; so when they saw the fruit of the other sort of tree of which they were warned not to eat, they did not want it, and they scarcely noticed it.

They would stroll down to the edge of the great water and look at it, wondering in their simple way what it could be;

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

and they watched the wild animals and their habits, and the birds build their nests, and they were very happy.

Although they were always sober, and solemn looking, yet they were pleasant towards each other, and acted more as though they would rather help than injure each other, and although their ways were rough and crude they did not resent this in each other.

As they wandered idly along the edge of the great water, the spiders and crabs would scurry away from them, but the woman surprised some of these crabs on the shore away from their holes, and as they struggled to get back she teased them with a stick till they became infuriated, and they snapped and bit at the stick; and then she stirred them up and she became greatly excited over their actions in their getting mad and showing fight as she molested them in their house-building operations, and finally she got so excited over their actions that she uttered a cry of delight, A LAUGH, the first one that had ever been uttered on the Earth. This was an entirely new expression of a feeling that she had often had before; she herself was astonished, she stopped irritating the crabs and tried again these new short syllables with different sounds; the crabs stopped their scrapping, nearby animals stood still to listen, nothing like this had ever been heard before; and the man who was not far off, came quickly to see what the matter was, and he listened; he had never heard anything like that before; and how he did look at her, and she was so surprised, too, at it, for it had come unbidden, and was new to her; and then he tried to do it, and then they both tried it over again and again till they seemed satisfied this new sound was a good thing as it showed them a way to talk of the way they often felt; and how they did laugh and laugh, and as the days went by she would listen to the birds, and then try her new laugh, until without instruction she was SINGING; and oh, they were

CREATION

so happy, these two great big giant children in their ignorance and innocence; no care, everything that they had need of at hand, and nothing to molest them; they were very very happy but they did not know it, they only realized their position in a dense stupid way as they lived from day to day.

There has been no change in the Earth's orbit around the Sun, nor in its revolutions on its own axis now, for long ages; the belt of heat and life is around the Earth midway between the poles; the Sun is directly over the equator and the Earth's equator is parallel to its orbital plane; the Earth turns upon its axis slowly, and the days and nights are long; this causes a sort of numb, stupid kind of condition to shroud the otherwise active mental abilities of both man and animal, while the short years bring maturity forward faster.

The Primate Ape that we left years ago, is now living in the same condition as then, not developing, and the fear and terror that they have for the two Human Beings, as they have heard of them, keep them far away from these two.

There are still violent earth disturbances that often kill and bury many of these very deep in the debris.

Returning to the valley, one day, after a journey about the Earth, I saw Ebe out strolling about the valley alone. Very soon she saw one of the Primate Apes, one of her former associates, when she and Adam were young and one; and although heretofore these had kept away from Adam and Ebe, through fear, and they had not been seen for a long time; yet Ebe recognized this one as being one of those belonging to the herds of her former associates, and she was not afraid as she knew no harm could come to her; but the Ape was a little afraid, until he saw he would not be harmed. He was a big, powerfully built animal and resembled Ebe very much, except that with her there was more intelligence shown, and then there was the peculiar light

about her, and she carried herself with a superiority that made this Ape at once recognize it; he was out for food, and too he had an inquisitive mind to see these people of which he had heard so much; and now as he searched for food, he watched Ebe, and she watched him to see what he found to eat; presently he found some GRAPES that were ripe, growing on a tree or big VINE, and he gathered some and ate them. Ebe saw this and noticed that no harm came to him, then she remembered how she had seen many birds and animals eat this fruit, and also away in the dim past, she recollects now, that she had gathered and eaten it, and no harm had come to her then, nor to Adam either, as they were both one then; but since Ja had told them not to touch or eat it, they had let it entirely alone; first, because they had promised Ja over and over again not to eat it, and they wished to do as Ja said, for He had made them, and had caused them to be what they were now; and secondly, because when they had eaten of the fruit of the Tree of Life they did not want anything else, although they might eat of everything else in the valley but this, if they wanted to do so, so that they had more than enough.

Now, while she was thinking in this way, this Ape was eating and watching her, and then he said, "Why don't you eat some of this fruit?" Ebe said, "Ja told us not to, and if we did we would surely die." Then the Ape, "That is not so, this is good for food, you see that I eat this and do not die. Ja has told you wrong, for He knows that if you eat this you will like it, and then you will SEE and KNOW that it is good for food, and too, He knows that you will not die."

Now, Ebe did not particularly wish for the fruit, but this ANIMAL SEEMED TO KNOW more than she did, and when he picked some of the fruit and gave it to her, she took it hesitatingly; and when he told her to try it and find out for

CREATION

herself that there was nothing wrong with it she ate some, and then she and this animal talked and ate, and she told him about Ja, but he did not want to hear or know anything about Ja. "I am as big and strong as He is, and I will do as I wish to, and Ja must not tell me what to eat, I will eat what I want to, and I shall be powerful, and all of the others will be afraid of me," said he.

Now Ebe had already begun to feel that she had not done as she should, but she thought, "I will take some to Adam and if he eats it, it will not hurt us then." So she and the animal went through the valley to the place where Adam was, and the animal laid himself down to rest, as he saw that they would not harm him, and while he was too much afraid of them to touch them, he could rest.

In the meantime Ebe brings the fruit to Adam, and offers it to him, and he takes it. At first he was a little astonished, and then he was not so surprised, as each of them often brought new things that they had discovered, and gave them to the other.

Neither did this fruit appeal to him, as each of them had almost constantly lived entirely on the fruit of the TREE of LIFE, and this satisfied him, though he would taste of other things, but did not do so through hunger; and so in a careless manner he took the fruit, and although he knew that he was doing what Ja had told him not to do, yet he did not fully realize the importance of his promise to Ja; and too, this woman had eaten it and was not harmed, and it looked good, and she had said that it tasted good, and it passed through his mind then that he had eaten it when he was young; but when Ja had pointed it out to him and explicitly told him not to eat it, many times, he had let it alone since then, as he had

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

promised to do; but he did not think of this very deeply, so he ate some of the fruit, and they both ate of it together.

And now in a very short time they began to feel very uneasy and they both wished they had not done this, for if Ja should ask them if they had eaten the fruit, what could they say? And the more they thought of this, the more uneasy they became; then they became terror-stricken when they discovered that they could not wish for Ja to come, as they had done before, but instead were afraid that he would come; and another thing, they had eaten this fruit only a few hours before, and now they discovered that the beautiful light mist that glowed, as it seemed to emanate from their bodies, and surrounded them, had now entirely disappeared, and as they looked at each other and saw this they were more terrified than ever, and trembled with fear and shame, and tried to hide themselves amongst the leaves; and in this condition they HEARD A VOICE, and though they knew it was Ja, they could not see Him; and the Voice asked them concerning their trouble; and they said, "WE ARE NAKED AND AFRAID." "HOW DO YOU KNOW THAT, HAVE YOU EATEN OF THAT FRUIT?" asked the voice. The man said, "I ate of it as the woman brought it to me." Then the woman said, "The animal that was in the valley with me induced me to eat, by telling me that it would not make me die, but that I should be strong, and know more about what to eat. Then Ja in a loud voice called this animal Ape awakening him, and then said to him, "Because you have done as you have, you will always remain an animal, I will never again make myself known to you or your kind as I have done in the past, no opportunity will be given to you now, after this, to become a being similar to these here, you shall know less and become as the fierce wild beasts of the forests that prey on the unsuspecting, you

CREATION

shall be as the REPTILE and as you snap at the feet of those that shall come after these, they shall stamp on your head, they shall rise and become superior, and they shall tread you down into the dust." And He drove him out into the wild; and to the woman he said, "Because you have listened to this animal, and have forgotten Me, there is much sorrow to be yours, you will have little ones and they will have great sorrow, you will look to Adam to be your protector, and your master, he will guide you, and will have all authority over you, and you will listen to him and do as he wishes." Then to the man, "Because you listened to the woman, you both will leave this place, and live as you did before you knew me; you will keep herds, and dig gardens, and fight wild beasts, and in sorrow and trouble you will live and die and go back to the earth out of which you came."

And he gave them to understand that they could eat no more of the Tree of Life, and that they would not see Him any more, but that when they were in trouble or sorrow, if they wanted Him very much and wished for Him, He would know it and do what was best for them; and if, after a long time, they were sorry for having forgotten Ja, and wanted very much to come back again to Him, and would want to tell Him about it, He would know it, and make a way for them to do so. And so Ja left them.

And now they, being terribly afraid, left the place at once, and wandered afar till they found a cave and entered it, and sat down weary and troubled, such a different condition from what it was only a short time ago; and in this condition they went to sleep; very soon afterward they were awakened by a terrific earthquake; the Earth rocked, the forests swayed back and forth, great boulders were hurled from mountain tops to the valleys below, the air was filled with the noise of the crash-

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

ing, snapping, and splintering of the tearing asunder of the Earth, and the shrieks and cries of the terror-stricken animals as they found themselves engulfed in this sudden catastrophe; and Adam and Ebe, awakened, stood clinging to each other in the darkness, trembling with fear and terror till the morning came, and then they saw what had occurred; the beautiful valley, the place where they had lived so happily, and had lived and seen and talked with Ja, had now all disappeared in the night, what now remained was a great wide level plain of nothing but sand.

They looked at each other, then at the ruin, then about them at the conditions in which they must now live and seek food, and with the wild animals as their only companions; and they sank down on the earth and gave way to sobs and tears; and now how they longed for Ja, how they did wish they had obeyed Him; but they had forgotten Him, and He was angry, and all this had occurred through their disobeying Him; and they sat for a long time with great sorrow and heartache; and as they would look at this wide waste of sand before them, they would weep until it seemed as if they must surely die of grief; but they became hungry and thirsty, and as the water nearby was salty and not good to drink, they had to go away. This day was now near the close, and with a long, last, lingering, look at the ruin of their former home, they left the place hand in hand; they found some fruits, seeds and water, and they retired to a hole in the rocks to sleep, but they had climbed to the top of a high hill, and so it was very cold, and they had great trouble in keeping warm throughout the long night, and in the morning they remembered that in a DREAM they thought they had seen Ja, and He had told them to go and kill some wild goats and sheep and use the skins to cover themselves with to keep out the cold; so, catching some of the wild

sheep, they killed them and used the skins for a covering; they tried some of the meat but did not want it; then they remembered how in the days now long past they had used fire, and cooked food; so now, as they thought, it all came back to them; they got together some material and made a fire and cooked some of the meat, and so they ate and drank, and as they began to get a better hold of their new condition, they journeyed till they found a more fertile spot in the valley where there were fruits and seeds and roots, and here they gathered together some stones and made a cave, and then they caught some wild sheep and goats, and these they kept nearby watching them and driving away the wild animals that would prey on them; and so they became accustomed to their new situation as the days passed by, but they would sit and talk of the past, and wonder in a stupid way what it all could mean, as they knew that it really had been, and that they had passed through it all; and whenever they saw grapes growing about, they would leave them quickly and entirely alone; sometimes they would even try to destroy the vines in their anger, and this would make them think of Ja, and then they would go to sleep, and on awaking would remember that they had seen Ja in a dream, and He had told them many things concerning the building of caves to live in, how to find fruits, seeds and roots to eat, and what was good, and how to kill animals, and plant gardens, all of which they would remember and try to do; also they were told how to make bows, spears, and domestic vessels and implements, and they tried to make caves of big sticks and leaves instead of rocks; and time passed on and they lived quite contentedly, watching the herds of animals they had, and noting their habits; and Ebe would pick up the little ones and enjoy playing with them; and as she grew more accustomed to the new conditions, she would laugh and sing to

these little ones, till the mothers would appear alarmed, and she would put them down, but all of these things made a deep impression upon her, and she grew very thoughtful.

Not long after this, I noticed that Ebe would watch an opportunity and steal away by herself and be gone quite awhile. At first this alarmed Adam; but later, as she always came back, and especially at night even if she had been away nearly all day he did not get anxious, as on her return she would tell him of the new things she had seen, and where she had been; till one evening she failed to appear, and he was alarmed indeed, and he waited and she did not come, and he would have gone in search of her, but it was very dark, and no moon was shining, and wild animals were about; and he tried making a torch, but the wind blew it out as he had no material for making a good one, and he was in despair; she must have been torn to pieces by the wild beasts. Oh if he had lost her now! They had had trouble, but they had it together, and now if she were dead! And Ja had said that they would die if they ate the grapes. What would he do if she were dead? He would surely die, too, it would be better, they would be together. And in despair and with an overburdened heart in his awful sorrow he fell into a troubled sleep, and he saw her torn by wild beasts, and crushed beneath rocks, he saw great waters come up and surround her and drag her into their depths, and in none of these could he help her, and the awful agony of it awakened him; it was still dark, and he thought, I will watch and as soon as I see I will try to find her, so he set himself to watch and in thinking about it all in his weary conditions, he went to sleep again, and presently it was morning, and with a start at some familiar sounds, he awoke, and was about to rush off on his search, when he remembered that just before he awoke, he had a dream, and he saw Ebe in a

shelter, and she was all right, and wonder of wonders, she had a little one, and now where was she, and what did this mean?

And this caused Adam to stop and think; "This dream might be true, and Ebe may be all right; but where is she?" So he went out and tried to remember what she had told him about being away, and where she had been. He decided that he would try a certain direction; he went some distance beyond the vicinity in which they lived, and looked for signs of footprints; and soon he found what he thought were some signs. He followed these for some distance and found that they led him up a hill; so on he went faster than ever, when all at once he missed the signs, and he looked about but saw nothing. The side of the hill had a forest on it, and nowhere about could he see any other sign, so that he turned back to find the former way by which he came. He found this and was looking all about him to see where it could go to, when he heard a cry that made him start, and again he searched and discovered a very artfully concealed shelter beneath an overhanging rock, and to this he rushed; and as he looked inside, what a wondrous scene he saw. Yes, there was Ebe and she had a little one, and as she saw him she signed not to disturb it. He therefore sat down and they looked at each other hardly knowing what to say. Soon she said, "This little one is ours; it is from MY PROTECTOR, so it is Cain, and he is like the little goats and little sheep that belong to the big ones, so we must care for it as they do for their little ones." And Adam would have gone out to get it some food had Ebe not stopped him; too, she warned him that he must not be rough with it; the mother seemed a little scared at first, for fear that Adam might hurt it or take it away, but it was good to see him look at this new being, a baby, and it belonged to her and to him, and the little

one cried a little, and the mother comforted it, the first child that had been ever born into this world by human parents.

They went slowly back to their old home, and they both again felt happy, but a new condition had arisen, and it made them both think and wonder.

Now, this baby grew, and the parents were very happy with it, and they carefully looked after it and protected it, and it seemed to take away a lot of moody troubrous thoughts that they formerly had. They delighted in showing it how to walk, and eat, and they would play with it by the hour.

Now, as I had watched all the proceedings of Nature from the very first up to the present time, I could not but notice how eager nature had been to push forward just as fast as she could, to attain a more advanced position in each and every movement; and now Man had come, and although she had turned the control over to him, yet she was always busy placing in his path such things as she saw would be good for him in helping him forward; and it seemed as though from my position I could almost see that Man, when he should become completely and perfectly developed, would be a being who would stand side by side with God, and be like Him in miniature.

And now I felt that, as a phantom I was shut out of this great work; I thought that I saw I had no place in these possibilities. A great longing seized me to be one of these earthly beings, and like this wonderful being Man, to pass through this physical earthly existence, be tried, and educated, and so if possible to become a worker in these conceptions of God.

This desire had hardly made itself known, when all at once I seemed to become annihilated, everything ceased to be with me at this time, but not before a sensation made it known to me, that, YOU SHALL BE THE NEXT CHILD BORN INTO THE EARTH AS A HUMAN BEING.

MAN

Prologue

My Friend :

This Picture that I am now placing before you, presents Man as a MENTAL BEING ; and as the subject is a very difficult one, this picture is not without imperfections ; if the writer had been infallible, this picture would be perfect ; as the human mind can conceive nothing except through pictures, and as these pictures are the food on which reason and knowledge grow and develop, so it may be that when the details of this picture are studied, new food for thought will be discovered, and the imperfections will appear as of minor importance ; the details of this picture were discovered in the impressions of the foot-prints as left by Man during the long centuries that have passed, along the Pathway of Life.

The picture of Primitive Creation, with its wonderful evolutions and developments, is now placed on one side, and it is to be the development of the MIND OF MAN with which we have to deal in this picture ; and this embraces the conditions which have surrounded Man from the time of his advent on the Earth, until the 20th century A. D.

The conditions herein recorded will discover to us Man's relation to himself as an individual, his relation to all other human beings and to his Creator.

We shall also discover his slow climb to the position of true authority, as recognized by God, through his own efforts, as always desiring to reach a higher plane of perfection, though this desire may or may not be understood by him ; and it may be selfish or unselfish motives that induce this desire ; the char-

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

acters in this picture have passed away, and as I am recording the past, I must speak in these characters; the role assumed, and the characters made use of, are necessary to the outline of the picture, with allowance for defects in names, dates, and chronological details.

It is not expected that this picture be accepted as an ultimate treatise of dogmatical formulae of science, philosophy or religion, as there are assumptions, but these assumptions can do no harm so long as they are known as such, and are accepted as interrelative conditions; assumptions of greater or less magnitude have always been and always will be used by Man to help him as he takes each successive step in progress onward and upward; tomorrow's spade may uncover the proof that yesterday's assumption was an unknown truth.

Abel

THE first that I can remember was when, as we were hunting for food, my mother grabbed me up in her arms and then climbed up on a tree, to get away from an awful ugly animal that was after us, and then she hugged me, and called me EBEL.

When the animal had gone she climbed down and we went away, and after a long time we found my father, and my brother, who was with him.

I remember this distinctly, because I was very scared at the awful ugly beast that wanted to eat us.

Years later, my brother Cain and myself would often go to play and search for food, but we were not allowed to go far away for fear of these awful wild beasts, and father and mother would always watch us.

As we grew older we learned to catch wild sheep and goats, and some other animals, and to catch fish; we also learned the kinds of fruit to eat, and where to find seeds and roots to eat; father also showed us how to make a fire with sticks or stones, if we could not get it any other way; he also showed us how to make spears, bows and arrows, and huts out of leaves and grass and sticks; mother knew how to cook food on the fire, and make vessels out of earth, and burn them to make them hard, father and mother could write as they talked and we learned a little at a time.

Cain and myself used to have a great many disputes in our play as he was very quick tempered, and used to want everything that I had and I would often give these things to him

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

so as not to have him get mad; for he was older and bigger than I was, and I remember how at different times as we grew up we had fights, and growled, snarled, and snapped at each other like the wild beasts about us when they were ugly; father and mother would stop us, but they too would often dispute, but they never fought as we did, and it seemed to make them sad, and to feel bad when we did; but we thought a great deal of each other, and especially of our sisters, of which we had three; we did not fight with them, and when we were smaller we played together, but now they would go off by themselves most of the time; they could catch fish and small animals; mother used to have them stay by her while she told them stories of her life, and father told us boys all about this too, and this made us hate those animal-snakes,—as father called them—which we sometimes saw, but had nothing to do with, though we were afraid of them, as they were big powerful brutes; and father believed that they were afraid of us, too, but I was often afraid that some of the males would run off with our sisters; and as we knew that there was only our family in all the earth, we did not want any of ourselves to get killed.

As we grew to be older, we knew that father and mother placed a great deal of dependence in the dreams that they had when asleep; and I learned to think that they were right, and they told us that we must notice these and do as they told us, or Jah, the Great One, would be angry with us as He had been angry with them; but we did not pay much attention to these things, as we were too busy getting food; we did not care, and Cain sneered at it, and this made father and mother feel very bad, and angry at times, because they were afraid that we would do something to make Jah mad.

Thus we grew up, the days were long, and we would eat and sleep and then the dark would come and be a long time, and we had to be sure and have some food nearby, because it was long till the light would come again, and we would get very hungry, and we could not go out in the dark to get it, because of the darkness and the wild beasts; too, it got to be quite cold during these nights, and we had to have something to cover us, and also to keep us from getting hurt when we were hunting in the forest amongst the thorns, and on the hills; so we killed the sheep and goats and used the skins for covering.

Now, I began to wish that I knew more about Jah and dreams, and I got father and mother to tell me a great deal; and then I began to have some peculiar dreams which I did not have before, and I too, saw Jah, and He told me many things as He had my father.

Now, I had caught a number of wild sheep and goats, and I watched over them and cared for them, so as to have these for food and covering as I needed them; and Cain dug a garden, and had fruit, seeds, and roots which he used for food as he needed them; and father and mother and our sisters did the same as we did, and we would sometimes exchange these with each other.

Well, one day as I was hungry, I killed a goat, and dressed it, and put it on the fire to cook, when Cain came with some vegetables and wanted to exchange; but I was hungry, tired, and cross, and I would not do it. As the animal cooked, it smelled good to us; we both were very hungry, and it made Cain mad because he could not have any, and then he began making snaps and grabs for it, and I tried to drive him away; and then we fought very hard, and we beat and tore each

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

other to pieces, Cain was terribly angry, and like a wild beast; and when he saw that he was not going to get any of the meat, he picked up a large stone and hit me very hard, and this was the last that I knew.

Seth

MY mother called me by this name, because I was born immediately after my brother's death, and my mother said that I was sent to her by Jah in his place; and Cain also who had caused his death had gone away and had never returned; too, there were three sisters, and soon after this awful calamity, one of these died and the other two were carried off by the Serpent Men, but later these two sisters came back to see us, and brought their mates with them, and they seemed not to dislike each other, although father and mother would have nothing to do with them, and they were sorry that the girls had made friends with them; also, they told us how Cain had gone far away, and was living amongst these same Snake Men, and had one of their females as a mate, and that he was BLACK, as black as coal.

Now all this hurt my father and mother very much, and this was one reason why they thought a great deal of me, and a young sister that was born just after me.

Father and mother told us the story of their lives, and my sister and myself would talk it over by ourselves, and we were very sorry for them, so we both concluded to listen to them, and heed their warnings, and have nothing to do with the Serpent Men and Women, and we hated them very much, but we could not fight them for they were too many; they believed that all this talk about Jah, and what father and mother had been, were lies, and that we did it to scare them; but, they said, "Jah is mad with one and has made him black, and we

steal the children and Jah does not kill us, so they are no better than us."

We heard all of this through my sisters, and it made us hate them more than ever, so we concluded to move away, as far as we could from them, and get out of their way. Father and mother accordingly found a good place to live with their herds and have a garden; and my sister and myself did the same, living not far from them so that we could go to them easily.

And so my sister and myself lived in the fear of Jah, and we learned from father and mother what to do, and we believed them and it made them happy, and we had a little one whom we called Enos, and this made our parents more contented and happy than ever, as they believed that this one was from Jah.

After this father and mother had many other children, both boys and girls, and so did we, and we were all able to hide away a long time from the Snake Men, and Enos grew up and took one of our women and had a little one whom he called Cainan, because it was given by the master; we gave the boys names and some of the girls, but not all of them, as we thought them inferior to the men; too, we all called ourselves SONS OF JAH, but the women were the children of men; we learned this from our father Adam, how he came from Jah, and our mother Ebe came from him, but we used the women carefully and not roughly nor did we fight them, for they were our women and gave us our children.

And so father and mother got to be old, and the little ones grew up, and Cainan got a woman, and they had a little one that they called Mahalaleel, and the others had a great many boys and girls.

Our people had now become so numerous that we had formed many villages, and each village was named after the first one to found it; my village was called Sheth, another they called Chanos, and another Cainan, and so in this way we could not keep hidden and the Serpent people found us out; we did not want to have anything to do with them, but our two sisters would come to see us and they would tell us all about these people; they brought their young ones and they looked like ours, and we could all understand each other when we talked; after awhile some of the young ones came to see ours, and some of these were almost black; they said that their great father was black, and that there were a lot of black people, and that they had one great father Cain, and they called the name of the village Channock.

They told us that they had those who were very quick at making needful things out of metals and stones, and they showed us knives, spears, and bows and arrows; and slings with stones and could write on pieces of stone to others far away. Now we could do all this ourselves, so this was nothing to us.

Now Mahalaleel had taken a woman and made a village and he had a son he called Jared, and about this time relations had become very friendly between our young ones and these others; I, myself, and many of the older ones did not like this, and even some of the later young ones did not like this, and hated them very much, as they listened and learned the story of the past from our old father Adam; and so when two of our women went away with one of those black men, it made us mad, even though we knew that he was related to us through Cain; and so one day as one of our young men was out in the field, he saw this black man, and feeling very angry at him, fought him fiercely to kill him; but the other was too strong

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

for him, and the black man killed him, and we could do nothing as he did not begin the fight, and too, he said that he was sorry, but he could not help being black, and if Jah would protect his great father Cain who was black, there was seven times more reasons why Jah would protect him, as he liked his father and Jah too ; and he told us all about Cain, and how he was very old, and how he warned them all to listen to Jah and to do as he wished, and not to do as he himself had done ; and they all liked Cain because he was very kind, and taught them not to fight, and Cain had told them the story of his great father Adam, and how angry Jah was with our first father Adam ; and too, he said that there were many of those who lived near them who were not black, but they were very bad, they killed each other, and beat their women, and drove them with big clubs to look after the sheep and goats and to dig in the gardens ; and they have cows and get milk from them, and they have caught some wild horses and they get on them and ride about fighting other villages at times ; and they drink the juice of grapes when it is sour and it makes them like wild beasts.

Now, these things made us quite friendly and I was glad to see happiness.

Jared now had a son in a far away village of his own, and he called him Enoch, and he was different from any of us ; first, he got very interested in the story of father Adam, whom he went to see very often ; and he talked with him and mother and myself, and he may have seen Cain, for he was so interested that he learned all that he could, and he learned to write and make impressions on clay blocks and then burn them so as to keep them safe, and he wrote all of these things down ; and he learned all about Jah, and found out how to see Him in dreams, and as he wanted to know all about Jah very much, Jah told and showed him many things, and these he wrote

down; and he told us that Jah had made him to understand that even as he wished to do as Jah wished, so the time would come when there would be great numbers of men who would wish to do the same, and they would all go to Him, and then some time Jah would return to the Earth with all of these thousands with Him; this was all very strange to us, and though we could not understand all that he said, yet we thought he must be right; he was very kind and gentle; he had a woman, and they had a son they called Methuselah.

Many of our women had now gone away with the black men, but none of our men had taken any of their women; but after the stories which we had heard of them, some of our young men went and brought back some of these women, too; many of the men now had more than one woman, we talked this over with father Adam, and he thought as Jah had given him only one, that it should be right for one man to have one woman; but these others, the Snake men had always had more than that; but Jah had not told us not to have more than one, so we did this way.

Now Methuselah had grown up and got a woman and they went away and built a village, and they had a little one called Lamech. Now at this time we noticed that whenever we saw Enoch he seemed to have a sort of strange light about him. We did not ask him what it was, for it made us feel timid to talk with him, and too, he was always busy writing on his burnt stones, and some said that they had heard him in the forest talking to Jah as though He were near.

Now all this was so strange that I went to father Adam and asked him about it, and he said that Enoch was walking and talking with Jah, but that now as he himself had gotten to be so old and weary, and as his woman Ebe had gone to

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

Jah, he wanted to go too, and so not long after this he went to sleep and Jah took him away.

One day as Enoch had finished writing, he said that he had now written the whole story of the past, and he gave these stones with the writing on to me as I was the oldest, and asked me to keep them as others would want to read them; so I took the stones, and while he was yet talking a very bright light seemed to surround him and he disappeared; it was very strange, we could not understand it, we talked it over and we concluded that Jah had taken him, for we remembered what father Adam had said; now I was very old, and I had seen much sorrow, my woman had gone to Jah, and I was very lonely; so after Jah took Enoch I wished that He might take me; so I gave the stones of Enoch to Lameeh and told him to keep them safe and to give them to another before he went to sleep; all of the past had made a deep impression on me, and I wished that Jah would take me, as father Adam and mother Ebe and Enoch and my woman and many of the children had gone to Him, and now I was weary, and as I thought of the past I went to sleep.

Noah

My father's name is Lamech; when I was a young man, I became very interested in the stories of some of the old men in the different villages about us; my father had seen and talked with our FIRST FATHER ADAM AND HIS WOMAN, but they were very old; and some old men called Cainan, Mahalalel, and Jared I found also knew Adam and Ebe, and they told me the story of Cain and Ebe and Sheth, and I saw many of the children of Cainan who were black or nearly so, and I knew the village of Sheth well.

We were such a large number of people now, that it seemed strange that it was only a short time ago when there was only one man and one woman, for after reading the stories of Enoch, which father had, by some of the older ones in our village who knew how to read and write in such a way, I did not think that we should call those who lived far away from us, and whom we called snake men, or bush men, real men of Jah, although many of our men took their women, and their men took our women as mates; I did not think it so bad to take one of the black ones, as Cain their first father was one of us, and though Jah made him black, when He was angry, yet he was not a SNAKE-MAN.

The friendly relations between these bush-people and ourselves in my father's time, was now becoming bad.

We said, that we were Jah's children, and that He had said that they were only beasts, and that they were like the serpents of the forests, and that as they tried to bite our feet we would stamp on their heads, and they told us, that that was

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

a lie, because they knew that Jah had been very angry with one Adam and his woman Ebe and had taken away the fine SUN-COVERING which they had in the beginning, and made them the same as ourselves; and too, Jah had been very mad with one Cain and had made him black because he had killed his brother, and Jah did not do anything to us and we killed many people.

And as I grew older, this word fighting made everything bad, and then all the people began robbing each other; the blacks robbed the bush-men, and the bush-men robbed us, and our people robbed the others, and each of the three parties thought that they were strong enough to fight and kill the others; and this became so bad that I was afraid that a terrible killing would take place, and so I talked with father and the old men, and they said, "There is only one way to do, find out about Jah and know what He says and do it." So I listened to all I could hear, and then as I wished to learn of Jah, He came to me in my dreams, and told me that the people were very bad, and that He would end all the trouble very soon.

I got me one of our women, and made a village, and had a little one given to me by my woman, and we called him Japheth, and the village we called Ja-Sheh because of our great father which Jah had given to us; and my woman knew a woman whom she liked very much and wanted her to be with us always, and this woman was black but she liked my woman very much, and as we were very contented together, my woman said I should also take this other woman as mine; and I did this because we all liked each other, and we had a son whom we called Ham, and he was nearly black, and soon there was another son from the first woman and we called it Shem.

We often speak of Jah as Ya'va, or El, or Em, or Eb, meaning that He is all powerful, and the great father of all

things, or two, or many great ones in one, and that He lives far above us in the great water, but He comes to us when we are asleep.

Now, as I dreamed much, and Jah told me many things, I listened and thought very hard about it, and I talked with the very old men and they said, "You listen to Jah and do as He says." And so, as I thought about it, Jah came to me in a dream and said, "I have seen the evil in all this great people everywhere; they are very bad and I shall punish them; there is going to be a very great fall of water, and it will destroy them all, but if you will listen to Me—I will protect you." This astonished me very much, and as I thought about it, I tried to tell the people about it, but they would not listen; they said, "We like Jah, but we will kill these bush-men and blacks." And this made my black woman very much afraid, and in her sorrow she went to sleep and Jah took her; and my first woman and myself were very sad over it as we missed her very much, and so we were very careful with the boy Ham that he should be as one of us.

When I talked with the people about the way they were doing, it made them very angry, and they hated us, and Jah said to me, "You make a house out of trees which you will fashion for it as I will show you." And I told my three boys and my woman, and they all said, "We will do as Jah has said." So Jah gave me the picture of the house which we were to build, and then we worked hard getting the trees, and hewing them to build the house; we could do this, for all the people had cutting tools made of metal for cutting trees and making them into huts and canoes; but none of them had ever seen any one do such a big work as we were doing, so they asked about it, and we told them that Jah had said that He was going to bring a great fall of water and destroy all the people because

they were so bad, and had forgotten Him ; but they would not listen to us, and we worked hard to make the big house to keep out the water when it should come, and all the three young men found women who thought that we were right, and they came to us ; and because Ham was nearly black he found him a black woman, and we were all very contented together, but we were very sad when Methuselah and my father were taken by Jah, and we said, surely these were right with Jah and He has taken them before the great water.

We worked very hard, and talked and talked to the people, because they were getting so bad ; they were killing and eating each other like wild beasts, and they all seemed alike, and they were very mad at our village because we would not be with them, and help them, and help one party or the other ; and we thought that, if Jah does not do something very soon, they will kill us ; and so we finished the house, and then Jah told us to take the animals which He would show to us, and all our women, and go into the great house which we had built ; and we did so and Jah shut the door ; and now the people who had sneered at us and wanted to kill us began to wonder what this all meant ; and very soon the ground began to shake and rock back and forth in fearful manner and great bodies of water began to fall ; and the people screamed and yelled in terror and wanted to come with us, but we could not open the door, for Jah had fastened it.

The awful fall of water now quickly filled all the low places, and our house began to rise on it, and so we waited in wonder and astonishment ; we did not eat, and did not want to eat, as we were too astonished and terror-stricken at this fearful calamity ; what, we thought, has become of all of the people ?

NOAH

And so we waited trembling in fear and terror at our condition, the Earth shook and rocked, and rose and fell in a most violent manner, we could sense this although we were all fearfully sick and near to death; and all the while the terrible down-fall of water; we could only see the water coming down; all else was hidden from us, and many many days and nights passed, and we, as well as the animals, were in a sort of sleep; not one could eat, and we scarce knew day from night. As the long days and nights passed there was no cessation of the awful fall of water. And we could see and hear nothing but this and every little while we could hear a terrible crashing and snapping of rocks as though the Earth was being ripped or split apart; and so we waited for a very long time till one day we noticed that the fall of water was much less, and then in a short time it stopped as we could see through the window which we now tried and found that we could open, though the door was fast; and in a short time the clouds cleared away and the sun came out, and how good it seemed to see the sun once more, as we had been in the dark all the time; and now the sun was shining, but we could see nothing but water all about us, so we waited till we felt the house bump into something and then come to rest, and we knew that it was on the earth but we could not see it; after a while we let out some birds and all of them returned, but later some of these which went out did not return, so we knew that they had found some land, but we could not see it; and so we waited and as we slept Jah said, "You and all your family, and all the animals will now go out of this house, and you will begin a new village, for all the rest have been destroyed." And Jah then made them to understand that because of what He had done, He now wanted me to make an agreement with Him that we would not leave each other, and

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

that if I and my family would not forget Him, He would not forget us.

Now, in the past, when we in our village wanted to agree about anything, we would kill a lamb, sheep or goat and roast it and eat it together, and in doing so we would always remember our agreement and not break it, for we remembered the awful anger which Jah had when our first fathers Cain and Ebel fought in disagreement over the roast lamb, and caused the death of Ebel and Jah made Cain black; and so now Jah caused us to understand that I was to kill a lamb and place it on some stones which we should pile up and wait, and I woke and awakened the others, and we tried the door and found that it was unfastened and we saw that we were on the top of a very high mountain, and that the water had disappeared except in the low places; so we let the animals out, and we went out ourselves and then we sat down and talked over all that Jah had said, and although it was all so strange to us and we could not understand it, yet we believed Jah because He had saved us from death in the great water.

And then we caught one of the lambs and killed it, and piled up some stones and placed the lamb on these, and then we waited to see if we were wrong, when all at once a flash of fire came from above and the lamb was scorched, burned and cooked; and as we were very hungry we ate what we could of it and we said, "This is the agreement with Jah." And Jah was pleased, because as we sat talking it all over it seemed as though we actually saw Jah, and that He said, "The whole Earth is now yours to do with as you will, everything, the plants and animals are all yours, all that belongs to Me is MAN; no Man may be killed by any other, or by any beast, as I shall require the life of that man of the Man or beast that so kills it, and Man may never be killed and eaten as food; you

must live in peace and keep your agreement, and you will have children and they shall replenish the Earth with people, and I will be with you and watch over you and protect you, and I will never again destroy the people by a great water, but when they forget Me and become bad again I will destroy them with FIRE; and so, as you have obeyed Me, and we have made an agreement together always to be one, so now I will write my name in the waters above you that I will remember My promise, and you when you see it will remember yours, and now if you look up you will see MY NAME." And then as we looked up, we saw a beautiful rainbow as it stretched across the great waters overhead, and Jah had gone.

Now, we had often seen this bow in the clouds, but we did not know that this was Jah's name, we only knew that we had heard that father Adam had understood that Jah was LIGHT, a very STRONG LIGHT, and therefore Man could not see Him, as He was stronger than the Sun, and that He had given this light to Adam and his woman as covering before they disobeyed Him.

But now as we got over our astonishment at all that had passed, we looked around to see what we could do for food, and a place to found a village; so we set forth to hunt, but the place was strange and we were on the top of a high mountain with nothing but rocks about us, and the valleys had water in them; so we had to wait awhile; too, we tried to find out where we were, and if we had ever seen the place where we were before, but everything had changed; we thought we knew the forests about us, but the hills and valleys all about us were new; we thought that we had not gone so far from where we were before the great water came; and too, we thought that the place where we had been had gone down, and that the water had filled the place up, and some other place had come up out of the water,

and that we had sat down on the top of this; it was all very strange to us, and we could not understand it. And then there is another strange thing, the days and nights are now not as long as they were before the great fall of water; we used to get tired at night waiting for the morning to come, but now it is here very quickly.

In our search down the sides of the mountain we found some roots and seeds, and we looked carefully after our herds; and we lived in this way for a time till the water went away; and then as fast as we could we went down into the valley, and we found all that we needed to plant gardens, and to eat, and good places for our herds.

We worked very hard and as we were alone it was lonely, but the women of the young men brought them children and they grew and soon became good company for us; during these years now that followed the great water, while we were all together, and working to make large herds of animals, and gardens, I thought very deeply of the past, and wondered if my children would forget Jah, as those had before the flood, and this made me talk to them very carefully about it, and they promised not to forget.

I had never eaten the grapes which grew about us, as they always reminded me of father Adam's disobedience to Jah, although I knew that all the people ate them, and drank the juice of them from before the flood, and our children would also eat them, and I could say nothing as Jah had not told us not to eat them; but one day as I was very thirsty, I told Cai-nan, Ham's youngest child who was near by, to bring me some water, but he went and found some of the juice of the grapes and brought it to me; it was sweet and tasted good and so I drank of it, and soon it made me very sick, and Ham saw it and sent at once to tell his brothers, and they came and helped

me, and I soon got better, and then I told them all, that even though Cainan did not intend to do me a harm, yet this juice when it became strong, even if it did taste good, was not good for man, as it made him a beast, and we knew that it was so before the flood, and I begged them not to use it, because if Ham did continue to use it, and his boy Cainan and all of his people drank of it, they would be like those people before the flood whom Jah had destroyed, and they would be just like the slaves of that time, and they would become the servants of the others who would rule over them.

Now, the time passed on, and there came many children, and Japheth said, "I will move toward the rising of the sun and make a new village;" and very soon Ham did the same, but he went more in the direction of the setting of the sun; and then Shem said, "I will go too, but I will go away off between the two." And so they went away and all promised to come back and see us often; many of the young men had mated with the young women and there were many children; Shem did not go as far away as did the others to build a village.

There was born to the first son of Shem a son they called Sallah, and I liked the young man very much as he would often come to see us, as my woman and myself were now getting very old; and I would tell him the story of the past, and I showed him the Enoch-Stone-Writing given to me to keep which was done long before the flood, and I told him as I did all the rest, that they should be careful to learn to write and read like this, and then they would know all that had been done in the past. Sallah promised to do so, and soon he had a woman and made a village, and his first son they called Eber, and Eber grew to be a very wise young man; and learned to write, and he read the stone writing which I had kept safely through

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

the flood, and he came often to see me and tell me of the great villages which the others were making far away.

The children of Ham had made great and wonderful villages of stone, and clay burned into brick, and their villages reached far away toward the setting of the sun ; also, the young ones of Japheth had gone toward the rising of the sun and made great villages, and we heard that many of these with some of Shem's children had gone away off to new land, out on the great water, and made villages.

Ham, Shem, and Japheth came to me now and told me about their doings, and tried to comfort me in my sorrow, for my woman had died and I was alone ; so I counselled them to follow Jah and not forget their promise to Him, and they said, "We will not forget ; but as we are getting old, we cannot come so far to see you." And I said, "It is well, we will all die and go to Jah soon."

I liked Eber very much, and I entrusted the Enoch stones to him, and he said he would be careful of them and keep them safe ; he said they had new ways of writing now ; Ham's children had one way : they made writing of the pictures of birds, sheep, goats, frogs, dogs, fish, knives, spears, kettles and many other things, and they put these together and made writing ; and Shem's children had another way : they used the arrow-head and made writing in the clay and burned it to make it hard, and all their writing was made of the pictures of arrow-heads, great and small in different combinations ; while the children of Japheth still wrote much as they did before the flood with straight lines in different positions and combinations ; each line, long or short, in its place meaning something, and this was their writing ; and Eber said that he could write and read all of these, both on the stones and on the skins with paint ; and Eber also told me that in the east

the people had built great villages of brick, without burning the brick, and that they had also made great canoes for the water, and that they would go far away over the water and bring back some wonderful new roots, and seeds, and beautiful stones, and gold and silver, and that the people were very glad to buy these things from them when they brought them back. The people of the south, he said, had made great villages of burned bricks; and they were making great houses and doing wonderful things; they are making many things from the different kinds of metals that they are finding, such as knives and spears, and bows and arrows, and axes and fish spears, and hoes; and they make beautiful things to wear on their arms and feet out of silver, and gold, and copper; and they have caught the wild animals as the cow, and horse, and camel, and these they made use of; too, they have great herds of sheep and goats, and they take the hair from the goats and camels, and wool from the sheep and make clothing for themselves; and they make the skins of the animals into coverings for their feet, and they also make houses or tents out of the skins; they did this latter because many of them liked to go afar and not to stop long in any place, so they could move their houses with them, and their horses and camels would carry these.

One large village or city way in the east they called Nineveh and another Asshur, and one to the south of us they called Babel; in the latter they had many houses, great houses where they bought and sold all manner of merchandise; too, they had places where they taught the young men to read and write, and kept many of their secret and important writings in safe vaults under the ground where nothing would destroy them.

Now, near this latter place, they had tried to build a very high and large building, so that if ever another flood should come, they could go up upon it and be safe, and they would

also use it to burn a sacrifice on the same as Jah told me to do after the flood, but this is evil, for Jah does not tell them to do this; now, Eber told me that when they wanted to build this building they went out into the country round about and compelled the people to come in to help build it; and these people of Japheth, Shem, and Ham became all mixed up, had now learned other languages to talk in, and they could not understand each other, as they had been separated so long, and lived so far apart; so because they could not understand each other, this building had to stop; and Eber told me he would place the Enoch stones in the safe vaults in the big city of Babel, and then he went away.

From the rising of the sun to its rising again has always been one day and night with us since the beginning, and this is now very much shorter than formerly; too, the time of seeing one star that we know just above us, to its appearing again in the same place later on, is our year, and this year we divide into parts by the time the moon takes to go from one new moon to the next; now, the years that I speak of are very much longer than formerly, and men grow up very quickly, and live but a few years and then die.

Before the flood it was the same all through the year, the sun was always nearly above us, and it did not change much during the year; but after the flood there was a change; at one part of the year it was very hot and the sun was quite overhead, while at the other part of the year it was colder, and the sun was far away, and also the year was much longer than formerly; and after this last earthquake there is still a greater difference in the same way; for, not long after Eber had left me the last time, as I was watching some sheep in the field, a most terrible shaking of the Earth began, it rolled, and jumped, and shook; and I heard the crashing, grinding, and

NOAH

tearing of the rocks apart, and far away I saw great clouds of smoke arise ; the mountains trembled, and great masses of rocks were thrown about in a fearful way, the animals were scared, and I wondered if Jah was going to destroy the people again ; but I thought, no, He promised not to, and He will keep His word. But what could this mean ? And soon the people came running to me to ask me about it, but I could tell them nothing ; this went on for a number of days and then ceased, and the people became contented.

Some time after this, Eber came again to see me and he told me that he had a son he called Peleg, and that he had called him this because of the dividing of the Earth ; and then he told me that a great many had come back in great haste from long distances because of the terrible jumping, shaking, and cracking of the ground and rocks, and they said they had seen the ground and rocks open and spread apart, and great waters had come in ; and big villages which they knew had disappeared, and many of those on the land far out in the water had gone away and many of the islands along the shores had disappeared or gone far away, and were not to be seen, and there was great destruction ; many of the big houses in the great cities were destroyed, and many people were killed, and this condition had continued many days until it finally ceased, and all was quiet again.

It was all very strange, and as I sat watching my flocks I would wonder about it all, and think of Jah's promise, and I believed Him ; the people came to me in large numbers to hear me tell of the past, and so I tried to teach them all about Jah.

It had been a very long time until now, and I was getting very old and tired since I saw Eber, and many stories came

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

to me of the great numbers of people around us in all directions, and of the wonderful things they were doing ; and I hoped they thought of Jah as they did these wonderful things.

Some time after this Eber came again, and with him a young man who wanted to see me and whose name was Terah. He was the son of a man who was the grandson of the son of Peleg ; and I talked with them and I said that I would like to see Shem, Japheth, and Ham once more if they would come to me, as I must die soon. So Terah thought he could find them and would go and bring them, and Eber told me many things ; his first son was dead, and Terah's father Nahor was dead, and many other things concerning the people ; he said that the people now went on long journeys across the land on the horses and camels, and they bought and sold all sorts of merchandise ; the women had learned to make cloth out of silk, wool, and goats, and camel's hair, and the men had found gold and silver, copper and iron, and many beautiful stones, and they worked these into many useful things. Too, they had found many new seeds, fruits, roots, and barks, which the others wanted, so they bought and sold these at Babel, and Nineveh, and Asshur and many other cities, and they were very busy.

Japheth, Shem and Ham returned with Terah as he knew where to find them, and as I looked at them I thought of the past, for they were now very old men, and I could see that they would not live much longer, so I told them that I wanted to see them once more before I died, and to talk of Jah ; and so I said to them, "You are old men now, and you remember how Jah saved us. Do not forget Him and tell the people to serve Him ; Shem will be the father of many who will seek the protection of Jah, and the tents of Japheth shall cover

NOAH

the Earth, through Ham shall come many men of great renown, and also many who will be as slaves; and so I talked with them till they went away, and as I thought of all the past, I wanted to be with Jah, and so I fell asleep.

Abram

My father's name is Terah; he is a herdsman on the plains, and we live not far from the great city of Babel; I like to live out in the fields, and watch the herds of sheep, goats, camels, asses, and horses, but I think my father and brothers would like to be in the city; there is much pleasure and wealth there, but there is also much evil, we hear, so that I had rather live where I can see the stars, sun, and moon, and listen to the animals as they are about me.

I had heard my father talk a great deal about some very old men living far away from us, who, he said, had passed through some terrible experiences in their lives, and they told some wonderful stories; this made me want to see them, but we could not because it was too far away; but after awhile one of my brothers died, and I and my other brother took his two daughters as our women, and then father sold out all his flocks and herds to my brother, and I with my woman and my brother's son, and with my father left this country and journeyed to a place on the other side of Babel called Harran, and from here I went to see these old men; the first one I saw was Shem, and he told me where to find Japeth and Ham, and these I saw and they told me about the past; their stories were wonderful, and I was astonished; and then I saw Eber; he was not as old, and he could talk better, and from him I got to know the whole story of the past. He had seen and talked with Noah and Noah had told him all about those away back to the time of Adam, and Noah had given him some brieks with writing on them from Enoch, and he had placed these in one of the great houses in Babel so as to be

safe, and these bricks told the whole story of the past just as Adam and Seth knew it ; and now this man Eber had also written all that he knew, as it had been told to him by Noah and his sons, and this he also put in safe keeping in Babel, and he had written his story in a different writing than that of Enoch's ; most of the people who wrote as Enoch did were now away off to the east and south, and many had gone off on to the islands in the ocean ; they belonged mostly to Japheth's family, but they were mixed up with Shem's family to which my father belonged, and most of my people were in this part of the earth, although some had gone south with the others. Those who had gone to far away lands and come back, had brought news of great wealth, and wonderful things of various kinds so that many went to these places.

I did not care about these things, as I began to get deeply interested in these stories of Jah, or Yava as we call Him. I heard the story of Adam and Ebe, of Cain and Ebel, of Enoch, and of Noah. I told these to my father but he did not talk much about it ; he wanted to go to a land which he had heard of away to the west, where he could keep large herds of animals ; he might have gone to Babel, but Eber told us it was full of evil and we had better not ; hence, as he was not well, we stopped in Harran for awhile, and soon he died ; I then had a long talk with Eber, and he told me about the conditions in the great cities ; he said, "The people have become very evil and forgotten Yava ;" and he told how they tried to build a very great and high building, so that they might go up upon it to escape destruction should there come another flood, and also that they might burn sacrifices on the top ; it had been remembered of Noah how he had offered a sacrifice and Yava had accepted it, and now they try to do the same in order to please Yava when they think he is angry with them ; the people in these cities form themselves into combinations and they have ONE GREAT CHIEF who rules over all the

others; these will go out and enslave the women and the black people, and any others who are not able to withstand them, even as they did before the flood, and compel them to work at building or whatever they need them for, and often they are treated badly; now, this is what they did to obtain workmen for this great building that I have spoken of; but as they got them together, they could not understand each other, as their languages were different, so they fought and hindered the work, and finally stopped it.

Eber also said that there was a great deal of evil in the cities; he said that whenever any great natural changes took place, or a great sickness arose amongst the people, or when they thought they ought to have special protection, they would burn sacrifices, and often they thought that burning a lamb would not please Yava, when they believed He was angry, so that they would steal children and burn them; and often when one was in trouble he would be told to burn his own child so to please Yava.

And Eber spoke of this great chief man in the city, whose work is to make everyone do as he wants them to do, for he makes them afraid of him; "so he told me not to talk to the people, or to teach them concerning Yava, as he would do that, for he was their chief. I felt badly about this, and about the ones who were burned, and so I went and talked to Yava about it, and Yava came to me as I slept and showed me that all these would come back again some time, and that their lives would be different, but they would not know, they would not remember the past; and He showed me that as a man or woman dies, only the one which we see with our eyes is dead, but that the man we do not see does not die, and that these would return again as little children, but that they would not know or remember anything of the past; and so on, over a long long period of time, many and many times over and over for a long time yet to come, until they

should all come to hear and know all about Yava, and to have an opportunity to serve Him if they wished."

And Eber said, "I told the people this, and the Chief was mad at me, and then he told the people that it was so, and that all the people came back again, and that they came in animals and killed people; he said that he remembered when he was a strong ugly beast and killed people, and soon he would again be an ugly animal when he should die and he would come back and kill any who did not do as he wished now; but that was a lie, because Yava did not say that to me; and then, too, he hates Yava, but the people think that he is right because they are afraid of him; but what Yava says, makes me glad."

"I think much about the dreams which I have when I am asleep, but I do not understand how it is that Yava talks, for as soon as I awake He is gone, and I think and think, and I am sure that He is right, and Noah said so too, and so I shall listen to Him."

Now Eber left me, and as I sat alone and thought of what I had seen and heard, I was astonished; I had always believed in Yava, but now, after hearing these stories, and knowing what He had done in the past for man, it made me want to know Him as Noah, Enoch, and Adam had known Him; and I thought, how can these people be serving Him, when they do as they are doing; and I determined that I would know Yava and understand Him, because all these things made a very deep impression on me.

So as I slept, One came to me and said, "I am the father of Noah, Enoch, and Adam, I am the father of all living, I am the creator of all that is, I am your father, and I am Yava; you will leave at once this land and go to a land that I shall show you. Walk before Me and be perfect."

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

And so I left Harran and went into the valley of Cainan ; but there was a famine in the land, and so we went to Egypt, and after a time we returned to Cainan, or Canaan, where my brother's son Lot and I obtained land and began to have large flocks and herds.

I was much interested in the people here about us, as they were of all colors ; and some were peaceable and some were ugly, some ruled over the others, and some were slaves ; some were wealthy, and many were poor, and all except a very few did not want to have anything to do with Yava. They had all kinds of beasts each of which they called their GREAT FATHER, and burned sacrifices to it.

As I saw all these things, and heard the people talk, I remembered what I had learned of Yava and what He told me, and I thought more deeply concerning it, than ever ; and so it came about that as I would sit thinking, and I would want to see and talk with Him, He would appear to me at once.

Now, as I was once thinking thus, ONE appeared to me and made me to understand that I would have a son, and through him a great multitude would arise, even as the sands ; also, he caused me to look at the stars, and to note the different constellations, and TWELVE were shown to me as representing TWELVE different conditions which would yet appear on the Earth, through me and my son ; and so I was made to understand the great plan of Yava for the future as he intended it to be, and whenever I would look at the stars at night I should not forget ; I was shown and made to know that I was to act as the representative of Yava in the Earth, and to teach and impress on my son and those about me the intentions of Yava in connection with His people, which should be born through me ; in my vision He established an agreement or covenant with me with a sacrifice to last forever, saying that those who should be included

ABRAM

in this covenant would surely be brought into a land chosen by the GREAT FATHER for His people; and so when I should look up at the stars and see a certain constellation appearing at a certain place, I should remember that Yava, the Great Father above, was to have His counterpart in the Earth, and this constellation would represent TWO BEINGS to me as it would appear over me at the time of the great grain harvest in the valley, and the other ELEVEN constellations would follow this, with the stories as they were shown to me.

The counterpart I have spoken of was to be born of my flesh, and was to appear in the earth to fight evil, which was represented by the reptile or CRAB, and he would have great power even as the LION of the forests, and he would be born of a VIRGIN, and he would judge man with JUSTICE, but in the end the GREAT EVIL of the Earth would kill this WARRIOR FOR THE TRUTH, and He would become THE GREAT SACRIFICE, bringing the TRUTH to ALL MEN; and this great transaction was always to be kept before the people by the continuous offering of the RAM and BULL by the people as sacrifices to be accepted by Yava until the time when HE should come, THE COUNTERPART BORN IN MAN.

I studied and thought for a long time all that had been shown to me, and we prospered in the valley and had large herds of animals; they came to trade with us from the land that we had left, and they told us of the conditions there; we were told that the people had practically forgotten Yava, save some of my father's house; we were told of one man who was sorely afflicted, losing all his flocks and herds, and his children; and he himself through sickness was reduced to poverty, yet he would not worship anything or anyone but Yava; he believed in him and trusted him, and would not let Him go; his neighbors thought his troubles had made him foolish, and said that his arguments

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

were all wrong, but nothing could tempt him away to worship as the others did.

These others had their own methods of worship, and they worshipped such things as they thought best; in the far east they worshiped an image that represented EVIL, calling it a DRAGON, and sacrificing to it because it was of such great power in the earth; in the other parts they worshipped the SUN as being the most powerful, and others worshipped the STARS and FIRE as their GODS.

I had become an old man, and the child that had been promised to me had now become a young man; and then I was asked to give him as a sacrifice to Yava; I did not understand it, but I obeyed Him fully, believing Him; and when He saw that I fully trusted Him, He stopped me, and made me to understand that because I was trustworthy, the covenant of the past was renewed and established forever between us, and my name after this was to be Abraham, or the Father in the earth, representing the Great Father above.

I was an old man now; my woman was dead, my son Isaac had gotten him a woman of my father's house, and he had children, and I understood that it was through one of these which he called Jacob that the promise to me was to continue; and this promise was the one given to Adam, that after a time, a WAY would be made whereby man might come back to Yava if he wanted to.

I had many other children, but they lived far away from me, I instructed Isaac in all that I had learned, and the Great Covenant with Yava, and also caused it to be written in a writing of the people not far away to the north calling themselves the children of the Phoenix, so that it might not be forgotten; and soon after this I fell asleep.

Levi

The first that I can remember, was my playing with my two brothers Reuben and Simeon around the tents in the field among the great flocks and herds of sheep and goats.

The next that I remember with any distinctness, was when my father Jacob moved with all his family and animals to a place far away to the west to a place called Shechem in Canaan. Here we lived and watched the herds of animals for our father; we hated the people about us, and they hated us; and so we did not stop here long, for our father Jacob told us that he had seen and talked with ONE in a vision, who had told him to get out of this land and go to a place called Bethel, because He was to give that land to Jacob's children, as He had agreed to do with Abraham and Isaac, and that He had changed Jacob's name to Israel, because He saw that our father would trust Him and do as this ONE told him to do; so we left that place and came to Bethel, and we saw our Great-Father Isaac, and he thanked his God that our father had returned with us all, and that we were safe; and then he told us that through us, the GREAT PROMISE to Abraham would be fulfilled, and so he died, and we buried him beside Abraham.

Our father Israel talked to us a great deal about his talking with ONE whom he called Yava or Father, in dreams and visions; and he warned us that if we forgot Him, and did as the people about us did, He would surely be angry with us, and destroy us; we listened to him, but we were headstrong and willful and so we paid but little attention to it; we were TWELVE BROTHERS by four mothers; our two youngest

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

brothers Joseph and Benjamin had no mother as she died not long before, and so father had them with him most of the time, and he thought a great deal of them, especially Joseph, as he paid great attention to what father said about dreams and visions, and worshipped the ONE he called GOD.

Now, the land was filled with all sorts of people, of all colors and races, and they worshipped all sorts of things, each of which they called their god; we did not like them, nor their gods, but we did not care much about any god; the language we used and the writing was nearly the same as that of those to the north-west of us, called Phoenicians; these people and those of our father's house came from the same family in the past; and so we lived and watched the flocks and herds, and fought with the people; and father would get very angry with us, and then he would make more of Joseph, and this made us mad, so we took Joseph one day and sold him to some traders who carried him away to Egypt; and we lied to our father, saying that he had been killed by wild beasts; and he was very sad over it, and then he loved Benjamin the more, and we wished we had not done the deed.

Many years after this, we had all found women for ourselves; my brothers all had many children, and I had three, and while some of us took the women about us, yet we thought much more of our father's house, and very little of the people about us, as we despised them and considered ourselves superior to them; for the thought that we were favored of OUR GREAT GOD, while their gods were nothing.

We had now become a numerous people, and had large numbers of cattle of various kinds. And then there came a corn famine over the land; there was no grain and our cattle died; we heard of grain in Egypt, and our father Israel told us to go down and buy, and so we went; and as the famine was hard

we went several times, as the Egyptians had plenty of grain; we were treated civilly as we bought our grain until a strange thing occurred, in which our brother Joseph whom we had sold in the years past to traders was now a great ruler in Egypt, and it was he who was selling us the grain; we were all glad at the finding of him, but we felt fearfully mean at having to tell our father Israel of our doings. But it turned out well, for Joseph invited us all to move down into Egypt to live until the famine was over; so with our father we all moved with all that we had down into Egypt, and we were shown a place where we could live in the land, which was called Goshen.

Now, we sold all that we had to the Egyptians for food until we had no more, and then we agreed to become the servants or workmen for them, in order to buy food for ourselves, and this made us so poor that we could not return to our own land when the famine was past; so we divided ourselves into ELEVEN CAMPS, and living apart from the Egyptians, each camp was named after its Elder; mine was called the camp of Levi, and each camp had a different symbol, standard, seal or banner that each of the camps used in order to show that we all belonged to the same family; these symbols represented certain Star Constellations, which had been shown to our Great Father Abraham as witnesses of the Great Covenant between God and Abraham, concerning the return of man to God in the future, which was to be through us; and each month of the year, beginning with the grain harvest, had its own constellation.

Now, conditions had become very bad with us; Israel had died, and we had taken him away into Canaan and buried him with Abraham and Isaac, but we had to work very hard for the Egyptians.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

Before our father died, he called us all about him and reviewed the past, and also told us many things concerning ourselves which were to take place in the future, but the most astonishing thing was his revelation concerning Judah, Joseph, and myself.

He gave us to understand that Joseph's work was already completely finished, and that in the future he would be left out, and his two sons would be counted in with us as Israel's Twelve sons; for I myself was also to be counted out, as my family was to be taken by God for a special purpose, and the symbols of Levi and Joseph would be transferred to Ephraim and Manasseh, Joseph's sons; that out of Judah was to come the GREAT RULER OF THE EARTH, and that this ruler should become so through the price that he would pay, that is, he would give himself to be the Great Sacrifice for Evil, and thereby become one with God to rule men; we could not understand it all, but it made a deep and lasting impression on us all, and we thought more deeply of our God now than ever before.

Sometime after this Joseph died, and we promised that when we should go back to Canaan we would take him up and carry him with us and bury him in Canaan.

We were now treated very badly by the Egyptians, as we had become as slaves to them; so we hated them as they drove us about, and we fought them, and many of us died, and it was during this terrible time that I fell asleep.

Moses

I was called Moses, and as a boy I lived with the Egyptians as one of them, for the daughter of the king found me near the water ready to die, and in ignorance hired my own mother to care for me; the reason of this was, that the king had become scared because the Hebrews in the land had become very strong, and were becoming resentful of the cruelties heaped upon them by the king, and so he ruled that all the male children should be put to death, and that the female children should live, as he could make slaves of them, and so this is the reason why I was adopted by the king's daughter as her son, as she found me where my own mother placed me hoping I should be saved; and in this manner I grew up.

I did not understand it when I was small, but as I grew older I found out that I was a Hebrew, as we are all called here to distinguish us from the Egyptians; my people assumed the name as descending from one Heber. I also learned that I was one of the home or camp of Levi, whose symbol was that of the Lion.

Even though I was brought up by my mother, I had to go to the Priests or Teachers of the Egyptians to learn to read and write in their language; but at the same time I learned to read the language of my people, and to write it; beside this I was taught many other things in regard to the manners and customs of the Egyptian people, and especially in regard to the things which they worshipped as their gods; for their efforts to uphold their selfish religious beliefs was of as much consequence, if not more, than their efforts in any other line.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

These Egyptians were, as I found out when I grew older, a mixture of those descended from Japheth, Shem, and Ham, the sons of Noah; but they seemed to show but little of the character of the children of Ham, or rather of Cainan, except in their religion, and in their language and writing; the Cainanites were much darker, and even very black; they were settled all about us in the different parts of the land; and were not as powerful or as energetic as the Egyptians; many of the latter could scarcely be distinguished from my own people, and I passed, because of my dress and manners, as an Egyptian, except to a few who knew me.

As it was necessary for me to thoroughly understand the Egyptian language and writing, I had to work very hard, because their writing consisted of the pictures of an innumerable number of things, such as birds, beasts, weapons, domestic utensils, and imaginary things; and whenever a new idea was discovered for which we had no picture, we had to find a new one, and I had to remember what each and all of these separate pictures meant, and so I had to learn to do this very carefully, as I was being educated so that I might be of use to the king.

This people was very powerful, and they not only subjected my people to slavery, but they made wars on those outside, near to them, and took all they had and made slaves of them; too, they did a lot of trading with those of other nations who were very much more powerful than these; and so because they were afraid of them, they treated them as their superiors, and as very many wealthy merchants came from the east to trade, and as these spoke in the languages of the east, so I was taught these languages that I might be able to speak to any of them.

But as I grew older, I began to see my position; and while I was treated civilly and as one of the Egyptians, and I had

MOSES

no trouble, yet I understood the condition of my people through my parents and my brother and sister, and I began to feel very sorry for them; I went about amongst them more as I had time, and tried to learn all that I could concerning them, and I made some friends; but they all thought me an Egyptian, and so I could not be too friendly, until after awhile my parents found some who were faithful and could be trusted in the camp of Levi, and to these they told the secret; and I was taken to them, and while there was much astonishment, yet it was agreed to keep the thing secret, and from these I was to learn all that I wished to know concerning my people.

Now, it was soon found out that there were trustworthy men in every camp of the Hebrews; and when my friends found this out, it was not long before I could meet these men in secret; and from these I learned the complete story of how they had become slaves to the Egyptians; I also learned the complete history of my people away back through the past; I heard the stories of Adam and Ebe, of Cain and Ebel, of Seth, Enoch, Noah, Shem, Abraham, Isaac, Israel, and Joseph; and I learned where the other people all about us came from.

I did not see how I could help my people, though I often wished that I might in some way; but I had a great desire to know all about them; and so with this they told me their troubles which they had from day to day, and it hurt me to know that I could not help them in some way.

As I gathered together all the parts of the stories which they told me, it seemed as though I could discover one continuous intention running all down through the line; but I could not understand why, if the God of the Hebrews had brought them thus far, He had left them in slavery; too, the Egyptians had no story like this; they had heard of the God of the Hebrews, but they laughed at it, and said it was all

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

imaginary; but the whole thing was astounding to me, especially the stories of Abraham and Israel, and how they really talked with this God in dreams and visions; and then this one Joseph, even Egypt could not forget how he had saved the people from starvation, because he understood the king's dreams, that not even the wise men, priests or teachers could do; and so I thought and studied and worked, and gathered all the information I could.

I learned of Babel or Babylon, and of Nineveh, and Assyria and other great cities, much larger than our Pithon or Rameses, the traders told me; I got writings from these places, both on skins and on burnt clay or bricks, and these things proved the stories of my people to be true; and this made me wonder why the Egyptians knew nothing about this great God, and dreams and visions concerning Him; and the more I studied the more astonished I became, until one day, as I sat thinking, something seemed to say to me "You are a Hebrew. Why should you not know this God, and know even as these others do?"

It gave me a shock, but I thought, "I can believe in the Hebrew God better than in the Egyptian worship and gods, but I can do nothing else, I do not know where to find Him, nor do I know anything of dreams or visions, though I know that I have dreams, but they are nothing." But somehow this thought would not go away from me, and it irritated me as I was at work very hard all the time; and too, the elders with whom I talked when I had an opportunity, seemed to think I might do something to better their situation, and this made me feel bad and morose, as I could do nothing to help them.

The years passed on I grew to be young man, and was counted useful to the king, although he knew I was a Hebrew and so disliked me; and the treatment of my people was getting

worse, and as they were treated more harshly, they resented it, and the king began to get more afraid they would get to be too powerful to hold, and so more masters were put over them, and more work given them to do.

Their burdens were fearful, and through all these years I had been wondering what the end would be, for the Hebrews one and all believed that in a short time a deliverer would come to take them back to Canaan, as their God had promised them; and I could not see how or where He could come from.

It so happened, that one day as I was out of the city, I saw a master beating a Hebrew; I must have been tired with study, and work and trouble over my people, because, before I realized what I was doing, I beat the Egyptian and killed him; and then I was filled with fear at what I had done, so alone I buried him in the earth, thinking to keep the matter quiet; but on my going out the next day, I discovered that the thing was known, and the king would certainly destroy me when he heard of it; and so scarcely knowing what to do, I hastily gathered a few things and left Egypt, going around the sea, and over into the valleys among the hills where the Midianites lived.

The people to whom I fled from Egypt were Midianites; they were related to the Hebrews through Abraham, as were the children of Ishmael, and also those of Esau through Israel; I had learned this from the elders while in Egypt, as these different people often came to trade with the Egyptians; so when I left Egypt, I made known to a few friends where I should go; the land to which I fled was one of mountains with a few small fertile valleys between, and here and there a few scattered herdsmen lived and kept their flocks; and it was to one of these places that I went, and made myself known to them as an Egyptian; and I was thus enabled to live in peace and safety, as one to whom I applied offered me an opportunity to stay with him

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

and attend to his flocks, while for some time I did not let it be known that I was a Hebrew, or why I had left Egypt.

The life I now lived was quiet, and very different from the studious, commercial life of the city, and it afforded me much time to think and reason over the past; too, the man Jethro who had employed me as a shepherd was a priest or teacher of their method of worship, and this was somewhat similar to that of the Hebrews; they believed in the God of the Hebrews, but they worshipped Him in a different way; but it was now from this man that I learned more about the past history of my people and their relations.

I had remained these many years without a woman, as I would not have an Egyptian, and I could not have a Hebrew; so now I asked the man Jethro for one of his daughters, and in time there were born to us two children, while I was yet a shepherd.

Now, during all this time, I was very much concerned about my people and their condition; and I pondered over the things which I had heard from them; also made myself known as a Hebrew to my father-in-law, and soon it became known to trusted ones in Egypt just where I was, and in this way I got more opportunity to think and reason out all that had been told to me, as I had considerable help from the priest.

So after arranging all these things in my mind, I came to the conclusion that it was time for a deliverer to come to the aid of my people. But who would it be? And as I thus reasoned, it came to me, as a flash, "Why cannot you help?" And I thought, how gladly would I do it, but what could I do? I was only a shepherd and an outcast from Egypt, and even my own people did not know me; and I went to the priest and we talked, and he thought I should go to Yava the Hebrew God and talk with Him; I was to go alone where it was quiet

and forget everything else, and fix my mind firmly on my desire and tell it to Him; I did not have to see Him, for He would hear me if I was in earnest.

So I did this many times without any answer, but I still firmly believed that I was doing as I should and that I should get an answer; so one day after I had talked a long time, as it were, to Him, I felt exhausted and downhearted because I seemed to be doing nothing, and so I fell asleep, and afterwards when awake I remembered having had a dream as I thought; I had often had dreams but paid no attention to them, and thought them foolish, but this seemed peculiar, and so I told the priest and he listened and said, "It is the beginning of an answer; you must persist, put your whole heart in it, leave and forget everything else, and place your mind on Yava and cry to Him that you want to see Him and talk to Him, so that you may know Him."

Now, I went away into the field and found a quiet place with my flocks, and I sat down and thought; and as I thought I fixed my mind on Yava, and cried to Him, and a strange thing occurred; near where I sat a bush appeared to be in flames; I knew not how it had caught fire, but it was strange because the bush was not destroyed and yet it burned; so I went to see this wondrous sight, when as I neared it a VOICE said, "Loose your sandals, for the ground upon which you stand is PERFECT." I threw my sandals from me, and bowed myself down to the ground, and the voice continued, "I am the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Israel, and I have heard your cry to me." And then He made me to understand in a long talk how He had seen the terrible distress of my people, and that the time was here now to deliver them, and that He would send me; and as I reasoned that I was unfit, and knew not His AME, having never seen Him, I was shown that I could go,

and I was to make known to my people that the ONE whom they had known as the GREAT ONE, THE FATHER, THE CREATOR, would now be known as THE DELIVERER. And I was to tell them that this, the Eternal Living One, had sent me to bring them out of Egypt, and out of slavery.

I came to myself, and I knew that it was a vision, and I wondered at it, I thought over it and talked about it to my father-in-law, and I also saw some of the old men of the Hebrews and talked with them, and it was decided to be secret about it and wait; and while we believed, yet I was to further plead with God, and to see that I had made no mistake; and so the years passed away, and I persistently studied and sought to find out all about my people, and their dealings with God in the past, and His promises, and all about the sacrifices; and in fact I sought to get every detail, so that I might not do some foolish thing.

And so, after these years of careful work, I came to the conclusion that the road opening up before me was the right one; I saw my own unfitness for such a great undertaking as that of delivering this now great number of people out of the hands of this powerful oppressor; I could not see how it could be done, nor how I could do it, so I constantly cried to God; I made known to Him that I wished to deliver the people, and my unfitness, powerlessness, and inability; and He, as often as I would appeal to Him, would reason with me, and then showed me that He would go with me; and all this time the hardships of the people were growing greater, and I saw no way but to accept the way God was pointing out to me; and so at last in weariness and almost despair I appealed to Him, and He said that I must go at once; and He proved to me in different ways, that although all this transaction might appear to me as being weak, as all the advice, warnings, and

MOSES

commands, had been given in dreams and visions, yet it was all true, and although I might not see His face, HIS POWER would go with me; so He told me that He had called my brother to go with me, and be my helper, and that he would look to me to tell him what to do, and I would look to God, to know just what to do.

So at this time I went to my father-in-law and told him all, and he thought I was right; so I took my woman and two sons and started for Egypt; and on the journey it would often occur to me that I was undertaking a very perilous task for which I had no authority that I could show; to be sure I had in my dreams seen my shepherd's staff become a serpent when I threw it on the ground, as I had been told to do, and it had become a staff again in my hand when I reached for it; and also my hand had become diseased in a moment's time in my bosom at a command from God, but I recovered it well again in a moment's time as I withdrew it; and I could see that this was of the power of God; but what could I do or say to the king or people to make them know me? Yet I believed in God, and we went on till we met Aaron my brother and we talked the conditions over, concluded to go to the elders of Israel, and tell them what had occurred, and what God was about to do.

In my dreams too, God had shown me that the king would be very angry and would not let the Hebrews go, and He said that before the king would let them go, He would be obliged to take the eldest son out of every Egyptian family, in order to make the king do as he was told; I did not understand all this, nor see how this could really come to pass; but I believed God, and somehow I felt very strong, and reasoned that this was the right way, as I was not doing this for myself, but for God and my people, and that this was His way.

As I talked with the elders of the people, I noted what they said, as they talked a great deal about God and His dealings in the past with the people; but none of them seemed to have any idea of what He was like, nor did any of them express any desire to get near to Him; He was a mystery to them, and they liked to stand in fear and awe of Him at a distance.

They seemed to feel that in some mysterious way He would fight for them, and deliver them from their troubles; even the most selfish and evil amongst them would say, "If we could only burn a sacrifice to Him, it would please Him, and He would visit a punishment on our oppressors." And this seemed to be the only thing they wanted, as they had the idea that God was exclusively theirs, and they were His especially chosen ones, no matter what they did.

I could find but little of the old time trust in God that had been with Abraham, Isaac, and Israel; for those of old had served God not for selfish ends, but did as He said because it was a duty, and they were pleased to do it at any cost to themselves; and so as I thought of those conditions, and made comparisons, not only with my own people, but with the Egyptians, I seemed to acquire a new power and strength, and I made deliberate determinations to give my whole life and attention strictly to God, and to learn to know Him, and how I could best serve Him.

As I now looked around about me upon the Egyptians and their worship, they seemed to act to me like a people who had lost their way, and were groping in the dark, and who preferred to stay in the dark and in ignorance of the right way.

I could see them burying their rulers in the great stone buildings, after the bodies had been prepared to last forever, as they thought, and then offering a sacrifice on the tops of

these buildings to these same ones buried below, but whose spirits (they believed) had gone to the stars, and sun; while the common people at death were either buried with some scant ceremony, placed in the bush, or thrown into the water, the ghosts of these afterward to return to the earth and to be the living nature in the common animals about them, the which they would worship and sacrifice to, to protect and aid them in their everyday selfish life; all appeared to me to be very degrading, for after a time even the worshippers themselves became as the animals that they worshipped.

I then thought of my own people, and it seemed to me that they had had a very severe lesson in teaching them what it meant to leave God and to stand aside from Him; perhaps now if they were to see His power put forth, and themselves taken from their oppressors, it would awaken them, and they would see God as He is, and they would take a strong stand to work for Him; perhaps some of them would be selfish and wolfish, but, I reasoned, the most of them would appreciate this great happiness that was to be theirs, and as soon as they saw in reality what it meant, they would all take hold immediately and help me in this great work ahead, for they must see that it meant going back to Canaan, and being their own masters, and being happy once more.

As Aaron and myself talked with the elders at this time, they would not listen to us, for they did not believe in us; so we concluded to work alone, and do as God said; in a short time we were shown what to do, and how to talk to the king of Egypt about letting the Hebrew people go away, but he refused to hear us; and then we were shown that God would trouble him, and in this way we tried to induce him to listen to us; but we would not, though God troubled him some nine times with very severe afflictions: Finally God said to us, "I

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

will make him let the Hebrews go." So we told our people that they were to go very soon, and that they must get ready; which they did. As they now had seen the troubles with which the Egyptians had been afflicted, they began to believe in us; we had been told to tell each family to kill a lamb and put the blood on the top and sides of the doorway to their houses, and to roast the flesh and to eat it, all prepared for the journey, and in haste.

And as we waited, in the night there came a terrible cry from the Egyptians, and then we knew that in every house of the Egyptians the eldest son was dead; and at the same time the Egyptians believed us to be the cause of this great affliction, and now desired us to leave them at once, which we did; my people felt that for their long hard work, and period of servitude, they should receive some compensation; so they took from the Egyptians all of the gold, and silver, and valuables that they could discover, away with them; and God had also told us that this time would be the beginning of a new year to us.

So we set forth on our journey with our animals, and our little ones, and all our possessions that we could take with us, toward Canaan.

Soon we came to the sea, and the king, who was very mad at our leaving him, came after us, and we wondered with fear what we would do.

Very soon a violent upheaval of the earth, lifted the earth beneath the water to the surface, and we passed across on the land; but almost immediately, as the king attempted to do so, the land disappeared again, and the water came back again, and the king and all his followers were drowned; and so we at once began our journey toward Canaan, on the opposite side of the sea from Egypt.

And now in a few days a new trouble began for us, we had eaten all the food we had brought with us, and now we had none; we were getting hungry, and we knew of no place where we could get more, and the distress of the people was very great; so Aaron and myself went to God about it and in the morning we found that in the night something had fallen from heaven for food, and God told us that it was BREAD that He had sent to us, and that it was to be our food till we got to Canaan; and so we lived upon this, and on the birds and animals which were sent to us to kill and to eat on the way.

But in a few days a worse trouble beset us; as we had journeyed into the wilderness our water had become spent, and we could get no more, and now the people were dying of thirst, and complained to us; so we asked God about it, and we were told to go into the mountain, and with the elders of Israel about us, I was to strike a certain rock with my staff, and we would receive WATER; the which we did, and we had water in plenty that came forth, and this formed a stream that went with us during our journey to Canaan.

We did not know the way, but we were guided by a light by night, and a cloud by day, and in this way God showed us our way, and also we were told not to gather any of the new food on the SEVENTH DAY, and this appeared very strange to us.

Now, in a few days, as we were in the wilderness and amongst the mountains, God appeared to me and said, "I am to make myself known to you and the people very soon, and you are to warn the people and make ready, and at the time when I descend to the top of the mountain you are to come up, and I will deliver MY WORD to you; so we did as He said, and in a few days the top of the mountain appeared to be on fire;

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

so warning the people not to come up, I went up into a thick cloud, and A VOICE said, "I have been called in the past the MIGHTY ONE, but now I am to be known to you as THE DELIVERER.

"In TYPES and in SYMBOLS in certain men I have given power to represent Myself and My Word in the earth, and this signifies that in the future I shall become a Human Being, and I myself shall come to dwell in man, and I shall afterward live in the hearts of men in all My power, when man shall be fitted to receive it.

When the time is right, I am coming to live amongst men as a HUMAN BEING; but men will not accept Me in this way, but they will kill Me, and after this I shall still live in the hearts of the few which will know Me; but the earth is not ready for Me now, so you will stand in My place; you cannot be Myself, but you will represent Me, AS MY LAW, till I come.

"I will now deliver to you My Words, you must speak them to the people, that they may know and serve me.

"I am the God of Abraham, I made known to him as I was able what I was to do in the future, and with signs of the stars I showed my intentions, and these signs you already know.

"I will now take the tribe of Levi from amongst the others to be My especial servants, as a memorial of My taking the first born of the Egyptians, for your sake, in order that they might let you go way; and Ephraim will now take his standard and symbol.

"I will now take these Twelve Signs or Symbols, and out of these I shall take Twelve Others, which shall be similar; and these are to be to you all the LETTERS WHICH WILL BE USED IN THE WRITING OF MY WORD, or LAW, or THIS LAW WHICH I SHALL NOW GIVE YOU; and in the

future you are to use these signs alone for all your writings as a people, and this will show you to be different from all others.

“All the time of man on the Earth is placed in FOUR PERIODS; first, Man as being directed by me alone, though apart from him, by dreams, and visions; second, Man under My representatives, as yourself, and those whom I shall choose to follow you, to direct the people in the future; third, the period of Man as it will be when I shall come as THE SACRIFICE, and as I shall live in the hearts of men in power, WITH MY WHOLE SPIRIT. And fourth, that period wherein all who desire to do so, will live with Me, and those who do not will remain on the Earth until the END.

“The first of these two periods are one, and the last two, one; and the TWO LOTS of TWELVE SIGNS EACH will represent these TWO GREAT EPOCHS; and I shall out of these Signs make you TEN WORDS (law), but when I come, I shall bring TWO WORDS MORE, that I cannot give you now.

“I will now show you a Sign; the people wanted bread and water when they were famished, after leaving Egypt, and you could not give these to them, so you cried to Me, and I GAVE THESE TO THEM; and this is to show that I AM THEIR LIFE; and so for this reason, as you yourself are a SYMBOL or TYPE, you cannot take this people into Canaan; you will lead and teach them, until they are ready to enter, and will see Canaan, and know that they will go there; but another must take them in, as I will choose ANOTHER SYMBOL TO REPRESENT ME in doing this.

“So it shall be when I come; in my life and death I shall be the Bread and Water, the Life of Man; and because I do this, shall be able to lead Man into the REAL CANAAN, of which this Canaan is to be THE SYMBOL TO YOU.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

“Abraham was the Symbol or Type of Myself in the Earth, as the Father of this people, to them; and out of him came Isaac, again the Type of Myself as the GREAT SACRIFICE that I shall be when I come, for this people; and Israel was again the Type of Myself, out of which comes the COMPLETE LAW IN TWELVE WORDS, and you are to remember that TWO WORDS ARE MISSING in the ones which I shall give you; but the other two will come with Me when I shall come as this Sacrifice; and this is shown in the life of Joseph and his two sons which stand as Types; and you are to be a Type to the people of Myself, as My Law, of TEN WORDS, until I come Myself.”

And then I saw a hand write on two stones these Ten Words, which I was to receive, and as it wrote, a Voice said, “Know that I am God; worship nothing beside Me; give My name to no other; do not work on the SEVENTH DAY; respect your parents; do not kill each other; do not commit adultery; do not steal; do not lie; and do not desire anything not belonging to yourself, that would cause you to take it, and so injure another.”

Then the Voice said, “I make the earth in SIX DAYS, and REST on the SEVENTH DAY, and so you are always to do, as this the Sign of Myself. In all things I am SEVEN, and the Sign of My Law WITHOUT LIFE is TEN, and WITH LIFE is TWELVE.”

At this also the Voice said, “As you journey to Canaan you will need Me in your midst, and where the people can see that I AM; so I want you to make a place for Me as I shall tell you, and I will come and be with you; you will not see Me, but My Presence will be with you.”

And so the Voice described in particular every detail of this DWELLING PLACE, and I was made to see a picture

MOSES

of all this building as it would be when completed; also, I was told that all former laws of the people were to do in everything, in their daily life, and from this they must not depart, nor turn away.

And so I returned from the mountain with the Law of God in my hands, and the picture of the Dwelling Place Of God in my mind.

I had been away some 42 days, when I awoke as it were from a dream, and with the two stones on which were cut the ten words of God I returned to the people; and I found that they had become tired of waiting for me, and had made a golden image to represent a sacrifice, and were worshipping it.

This grieved me, and I threw down the stones I had in my anger, and smashed them; and then I made the people destroy this image, and then I told them all that I had heard, and what they were to do; and so after awhile I left them making the TABERNACLE, and I went into the mountain again, and had the Law cut on other stones, as God had commanded me to do.

I stayed with God at this time 42 days, and during this time He made me to understand the future very clearly; He showed me the meaning of the different parts of the Tabernacle, and also of the different sacrifices; and He showed me that the Deliverer was not simply one who could deliver the people from the Egyptians, but that this Deliverer was one who would deliver the people from the slavery of evil, and open the way for Man to become reconciled to God, through penitence and repentance.

So we made the Tabernacle, and set it up; and when everything was ready we made a sacrifice to God, as He had told me; and then He came down as a light above the Tabernacle at night, and as a cloud by day; and now this was where

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

we were to enquire of God, and find out His will ; and this was to be my brother Aaron's work as the HIGH PRIEST.

God still continued to speak to me, and to tell me what to do, and where to go ; so we journeyed till we came near to Canaan, and we sent twelve men to view the land and report on it ; ten of these men came back and reported that the conditions were such that we could not possibly go in ; but two of them reported favorably ; and I was very much distressed, but God said, "As they still doubt Me, I will prove them ; they shall not go in till they can know and trust Me ; these shall die, but their children shall go in ; these shall stay 42 years in the wilderness and then Joshua and Caleb shall go in with the people, and Joshua shall lead them in." And then we turned back to the wilderness where we were to wander for 42 years, till all these people who were over 20 years of age, who had doubted God, should all be dead ; and so we lived in the wilderness, going about from place to place.

There was much strife and jealousy, and a great deal of selfishness and ugliness amongst the people, but as time went by they died, and their children learned, and began to trust God better.

While we now lived in the wilderness, I studied much the meaning of all the parts of the Tabernacle, as I was instructed of God, and I learned that there was a very deep meaning attached to all the numbers used in this great transaction.

The numbers 12, 10, 7, and 6, were always there, and I learned that 7 referred to God, and that 12 referred to His Full Law, while 10 was the Law Without Life.

I also learned that 6 stood as a symbol for the periods in which God was completing His work in bringing Man to perfection up through creation and development ; and it also stood for the 6 periods of time given to Man in which to understand

God if he so wished; also it represented the ordinary 6 days of the week, in which the people might work, and this stood as a Symbol of the greater periods; while the Seventh was the Symbol of the rest period which Man was to have with God, if found perfect at the end of the sixth day.

Too, I learned that each day-period was 1000 years, and that 6000 years was the limit of Man's week wherein to work here, and to determine what to do, at the end of which time those found perfect, would be taken away, and the rest remain as animals till the full 7000 years here were ended.

During all these long years, while we were in the wilderness, and I was continually approaching God on behalf of the people, I never felt any fear of God; I realized that He was the Great Creator, and Father, and I felt that as He had dealt with us, He was our Deliverer; and so I stood in awe of Him, but never fear, for I was trying with my whole strength to do His will, and I knew that He knew this.

I learned to know that the LAW OF GOD MUST BE OBEYED, and if the Law was broken, there was no help save to ask God to be merciful, and trust Him; for I now knew that the time was coming when those who had disobeyed God through ignorance or willfulness would be given an opportunity to return to Him, if they desired to do so.

I plainly saw that the responsibility rested with man himself, and that, if after having known and understood his disobedience to God in all its entirety, he was repentant and humble; and then he desired with his whole heart to return to God, God would place His seal upon him, and accept him; but the time for this had not yet arrived, and man must live and wait in hope, and trust.

After my interview with God in The Mountain, I was surprised to note that the people were fearful of me as I returned

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

with the two tablets of stone, with the Law written on them; and I soon discovered that it was because my body was shining, or giving out remarkable radiant light; and so to stop this fear, I covered my head, as my clothing would deaden this light to them; I pondered over this circumstance for a long time, until I remembered what I had learned of Adam and Ebe, and then I realized more fully how this was the seal, the witness, placed upon or within one accepted of God, and allowed in His presence; and this had led me to ask Him why I could not see Him, as I realized that in all dealings with Him it had been as in a vision; and if I saw a being, when I awoke, I knew that this could not be He, but merely a symbol of Him.

And He told me that it was not possible for mortal man to see Him and live. "But," He said, "I will hide you in the rock, and place my hand over your eyes, and after a time you will awake and see Me in the Earth as I pass through." And I knew that this referred to His coming in the future, so I would wait.

As we journeyed, I wrote all the words of the Law, and all the words of God as given to the people for their guidance in their daily life, and everything that the people should know, in the new writing of The Law.

My past life, and that of my people, as far as I could learn, I had already written while I was a herdsman in the mountains, in the Egyptian and in the Phœnician writing.

The people were taught to read and write in this new writing of The Law; and they were given instructions to keep all these writings safely concerning themselves, when I should go away.

And then God told me that the time had come when I must appoint a successor; "for," He said, "you may not enter Canaan, for the reason which I have told you; I have appointed

MOSES

Joshua to lead this people into Canaan, and you will transfer your power to him that he may take charge."

The people had now become strong, and were able to care for themselves.

We had during the past 42 years many wars, advised by God Himself, with the people about us; and also much trouble because of the evil in our own midst; but the people had grown to understand that there is but ONE GOD, and that THEY MUST OBEY HIM, or suffer in consequence.

So I went over all the past history of the people with them, reviewing every step of the way from Abraham down to this time; and I also went over all the journey since we left Egypt, and reviewed all that had occurred to us since then; and I again held up the Law Of God to them that they might not forget it, and again I brought before them the sacrifices, and the meaning of them; and all the parts of the Tabernacle, and the meaning of these parts; and thus I led and taught them as best I could, that I might impress upon them the meaning of that great transaction that was yet to be accomplished, when God should come Himself to be with them; and I thoroughly warned them that they must always keep this before themselves, and before their children, and remember to carefully keep all the Counsel of God, or He would surely forsake them, and they would return to slavery.

And so, knowing now that I could do no more, I gave my charge to Joshua, and went up to the top of the mountain of which God had before spoken to me, near to Canaan, to see the land that my people were to enter; and as I looked it over, and I thought of all that God had done through me; how He had taught me, and how He had led all this great number of people out of slavery; and how different it all was from the

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

life in Egypt, it all seemed so wonderful to me, and it seemed as though I had been as a child in the hands of God.

And as I sat and thought of these things, it seemed as though I lost all knowledge of the things about me; and, as it were, I went to sleep; and then in a line with what I had previously been thinking, I would dream of what I had been in the past; and then in my dream, I would go over our daily life in the wilderness; and then I would realize that I was dreaming; and then my dreams would change, and I would dream of what God had said about His putting me to sleep; and then I would dream that this was the sleep, and then I would feel weary and stop dreaming. After a time I would again dream, and would wonder at the new condition that I was in; and I would see new faces which I did not know, and great numbers of people would surround me, coming and going, and not stopping long enough for me to judge who, or what they were; but now in my dream, I seemed to receive a sensation, as from some powerful influence, that seemed to impart the information, that these which I seemed to see, were those which had been on the Earth, and had died and were passing through this state, and were again returning to the Earth, and this seemed to be going on all the time.

And so, these which seemed as living human beings to me, really caused themselves to appear so to me, by the pictures which they presented to me; and these pictures represented in full, what each individual had been in its past life; and each picture that was presented by a new entry, was immediately known to all others who were at the time in this state.

And so, some seemed to look sad, some very evil; and others as though they were pleased, and contended; but one and all seemed anxious to return as quickly again to the Earth as possible, as though they had brought some intuitive knowledge

MOSES

with them that there was something more on the Earth that they had each got to do, which they had not yet finished; and so each seemed anxious to return, and complete its allowed existence, in accordance with its own individual desires; nothing of the future was pictured here, nor was anything of this state, or of the past retained or carried into the future.

I speak of these as dreams, and yet they seemed very real indeed; there was love, and innocence; hatred, jealousy, and hypocrisy; kindness, and sympathy, all mingled together: but they could affect nothing here, nor could they affect any on the Earth; they simply knew the past life history of themselves, and of their former surroundings, by reason of this picture record imprinted upon the ETERNAL LIFE POWER CENTRE around which physical bodies had been built.

With me, the dreams of the past now disappeared, and new and peculiar ones began take their places, and I realized that those who were now passing around me were bringing me these strange pictures of the most wonderful conditions; I saw great cities of wood and stone, wonderful and magnificent buildings; and I saw my people worshipping and offering sacrifices in a magnificent structure that was similar to the Tabernacle that I had known, but the place was strange to me, although it was wonderfully built; I looked for the MOST HOLY PLACE to see if it was there, and it was, and I saw THE LIGHT above it to show that God was there, and I seemed to feel satisfied at this, but I was astonished at all this, and wondered if God had told them to do it; and then I thought, I am tired I will not see any more, I will rest, and so as it were, I went to sleep; again a sensation came to me arousing me, and I began to wonder at the scenes around me now, and again strange people about me, and strange customs that I knew not, and I saw pictures of my people, and they were in great trouble; they had become slaves

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

to other peoples; they had not followed God and their wonderful Tabernacle had been taken away, I could not understand these pictures, myriads of millions of them, passing swiftly in review, and I realized that it was from these who were continually coming and going, who were the messengers from whom I received these pictures, as nothing could reach me from the living; and so this condition was repeated over and over many times, and then I would seem to tire and would rest from it for awhile; and then again a sensation would cause me to want to see and know, and I saw another wonderful Tabernacle, most wonderfully built, and the people were there in great numbers, and the Levites were there at work, and the High Priest was there, and it seemed all very great and good, but as I looked at the Most Holy Place I saw no light, and then I thought, "Where is their God?" And it moved me greatly.

Now in my visions, as I noted the vast numbers of people, of all ages, and from all lands, I saw one who appeared at a time when I was noticing the people worshipping in the Great Stone Tabernacle; and at that time, I noticed that he did not seem anxious to rush back to the Earth with the rest; and as I noted him, a vision appeared, in which I saw this one, and he seemed to be in great distress because the people about him were leaving God; I saw him in many scenes, and became very interested in one in which I saw him build an altar of stones, and prepare a sacrifice and place it thereon; and then fire descended and consumed the sacrifice; and then I saw him at other times in company with another, and as they went about the land, they talked and were deeply interested in the fighting of evil with the truth; and as I watched them, I seemed to hear a quick sharp call, ELIJAH; and at once a bright light surrounded him, and he was gone; and then I thought, God has taken him, for this is the Light Of God which surrounded

Adam, and myself, on the Earth, and this is why he is here, and waiting, like myself.

And now a desire came to me to know this one, and we seemed to draw near together, and then this one said, "I am Elijah, and I know you are Moses, for you have been presenting pictures to me of yourself and the past, ever since I came here, and I know that you are waiting for God to call you; the time has not yet arrived for Him to come to the Earth, and so He has allowed me to remain, that I may see Him when He comes." And so we came to know each other in this state, and as the time passed, we noted the conditions of the people as they passed us, and it seemed after a time, that in the visions which we saw, there was no desire on the part of the people to truthfully serve God; each and all seemed bound up in selfishness; evil, cruelty, and hypocrisy seemed to fill the mind of every one, and the scenes which we saw now were terrible; the people were all mixed up, and were fighting and killing each other like wild animals.

And now as Elijah and myself were near each other continually, I was astonished when I discovered that he had disappeared. I watched the people pass, and I had strange visions of the conditions amongst the people, but I could not discover him; some time later, as I was watching the people, one came to me, and gave me to understand that he was one who had just come from the earth, and he said that he knew me by the pictures emanating from me, and that I was Moses; and he said he was John, called THE BAPTIST; he had been a prophet, and had seen the long looked-for Deliverer, who was to come and had prepared the way, and brought him before the people, but because they hated him, they had killed him, and now he was waiting to return, when he should be called; and so we reviewed the past, and I now learned that this Deliverer

be MY THREE GREAT WITNESSES NOW and in THE FUTURE; upon us SIX rests the whole destiny of Man, and when I have accomplished My whole work, we shall then be SEVEN, for then I shall be as God, I am TWO, I came as man to make the way clear for Man to come to Me as God; and as man, I am the perfect sacrifice to be offered.

You saw that the Light in the Temple had disappeared, this is because the people have nearly all deserted Me; and now I must come myself and guide them; and I am giving myself as a sacrifice in order to bring Man to myself, I am now to be the sacrifice in the place of bulls, sheep, and goats, and I am to bear the disobedience of the people, that I may win them to Me, as a fisher catches fish; and in order to do this, it is necessary for Me to be the Son of Man, born of woman as you see Me, but without blemish, or disobedience to God, that I may be the perfect offering."

So now we three understanding each other, the other three also knowing and understanding, both Elijah and myself said, "It is enough; You are fulfilling all the conditions to be this Great Sacrifice which is so necessary, that Man may be able to come back to God."

And then we talked of the future, and Elijah said that if it were possible, we would like to have a part in the future, in working with God, and His Son, in the great work of trying to bring back to God those who were going astray.

Then JESUS said to Elijah, "You were My great prophet, and at that time you wanted to be the one to introduce Me to the people; you loved Me, so that you wanted to see and know Me first, and I granted this, I called you, and you came as THE VOICE IN THE WILDERNESS, and you were killed for My sake; and now would you do it again?" And Elijah answered, "Willingly."

Then Jesus said to me, "Moses, you were My great Law Giver, you fought and lived for Me, because you loved Me more than all others, and you bore the hardship and taunts of a rebellious people who would have killed you if they had dared, and had it not been for Me; and you did it willingly, and patiently, and for My sake; and you wanted to see Me on the Earth, and I said that I would grant you this, and so I have kept you until now. Do you still wish to return and to fight for Me for the truth under the new conditions, and as a follower in My name?" And I answered, "Most gladly."

Then Jesus said to us, "it shall be to you as you wish, but you will arrive too late to be with Me as a human being, for the time of my departure is at hand, and I am ready to be offered; but when you do arrive and begin your work, I will be with you as the Light was in the Temple when I was there, and for as long as you will let Me; and then you will know that as I lived in power in the Temple, so I will be in you to guide and direct you as I would have you do, till you have become perfect, and can come and live with Me forever."

And thus we talked, till Jesus noted that his three witnesses had fainted, and fallen from fright; and then he said, "We must part now, but is is not for long, till the end of all things; TWO PERIODS have already passed, only one now remains in which Man may make himself perfect; and then, at the end of this period on which we are now entering, you two, with all My followers who are to come, will be with Me, and together we will rule the Earth during the next period." And so saying, He went to His witnesses who were faint with fear at seeing Elijah and myself, and in listening to the establishing of this great transaction; and as He did so, we all seemed to vanish from each other, and I went to sleep, and soon I heard a voice calling me to come back to the Earth.

32-78—MAN I.

I was a Jewish lad, born of Jewish parents in Jerusalem, the same year that the great Messiah of our people was crucified.

When a child I heard of a man called Peter who was one of the TWELVE CHOSEN ONES of the Messiah and who spoke to the people, and I also heard of one called Saul who came afterwards to take the place of one man, who had been chosen as one of The Twelve by the Messiah, but who was very bad, and who turned traitor to the Messiah, and when he saw what he had done went and killed himself; and we heard that this man Saul had said that as he was journeying on the road, that he hated the name of Jesus exceedingly, but God spoke to him, and told him that he was to be one of His followers to work for Him, and to take the place of the one who had deserted Him; so now we heard that this Saul had become a strong teacher, and follower of this Messiah Jesus.

As I grew older I understood that my people as a rule did not believe in this Messiah, nor His teachings, nor did they wish to have anything to do with His disciples.

The Lawyers, Elders, and High Priests of our people said that He was an imposter and a criminal, and so caused Him to be put to death because, they said, "if He had been the true Messiah, He would have delivered us from the Romans." At about 20 years of age, I began to understand the conditions better, and I realized that the Romans were over us as our rulers, and we disliked them very much; but I had heard many things from these men Peter, and Saul, now called Paul; and

they told the people that if they did not repent, and come to God as they should, the great powers about us would surely come, as had been done before, and take away our city, make slaves of us and destroy our Temple; and they said that the Temple was now worthless, for God was not there, as the people had crucified Him in the Messiah; and the people hated these teachers very much, and would have killed them if they had dared; but as I listened to them, and heard all that they had said, I was sure they were right.

When I was 30 years old the conditions in Judah, as in all Palestine, were terrible, and my people so hated all outsiders, that it seemed as though surely something terrible would occur very soon, as it was one continual growl all of the time, between my people and the Romans, like as it would be amongst wild animals.

My people still continued to sacrifice in the Temple, and the Romans laughed at us, and taunted us that WE had crucified OUR KING; and then our people as hypocrites would lie and say that they had no king but Caesar, and then the Romans would call us slaves of Caesar.

In the Roman year 65, I was an accepted teacher of Jesus; I firmly believed in Him and in His teaching, but it was hard to understand what it all meant; it seemed as though all the prophets and teachers of the past were merely stepping stones to something higher as the years went by, and that as the conditions of the past were all gone, we were now to be our own individual judges of ourselves, and that we were to learn to reason from the past, what we were to do and be in the future.

But it was terrible now in Palestine; our people were ugly, and the Romans were savage; too, I could not teach in public, for my people would have killed me; they had grown to hate this Messiah Jesus intensely and conditions were fearful.

In the Roman year 76 I was a slave on a Roman galley on the great Sea; Jerusalem our great and beautiful city, had been destroyed, and the beautiful Temple had been burned and broken down, and all my people had either been killed, enslaved, or driven off to be enslaved by others in the wilderness; my own family was driven from me, and I was just alive, but I was very feeble; we were then on our way to Rome, but I did not think that I should ever arrive there, so I wrote some of these things on a paper, thinking that perhaps some of my family in the future would learn what had become of me.

I knew, that I was, no matter what became of me, a true believer in Jesus, and that He was the True Messiah, and I knew that in the future others would learn to know Him better; a sentry shouted to me to row, but I was very feeble and I could not, so he beat me on the head, and I lay down, and knew no more.

78-159—MAN 2.

I was of Hellas, but we originally came from Ephesus; I was born in the Roman year 78, and at 30 I was listening to a man who was teaching us a new worship, and from new gods; this man was called Polycarp, and he was a scholar of one called John, who was one of The Twelve men chosen by their great teacher Jesus, of the Jews; my people were of the Jews, but the Romans hated us so badly, we called ourselves Grecians, so they would let us alone.

All around us the people worshipped many gods of different kinds; with the Grecians it was Zeus and his associates; and with the Romans it was Jupiter and his associates; and they burned sacrifices to these; but I had been listening to the man who said Jesus was the ONLY ONE, and he told us why He is so, and I believed him to be right.

It was a great crime to have a new god, or a new worship either in my country, or with the Romans; we had to worship as the rulers did, or they would kill us, so we had to be very secret; this man Polycarp had suffered terribly at their hands, because they said, they thought it was his fault because many of the people wanted to be free, and not be slaves to Caesar; there were many who would like to have believed in this new way, but in Rome they were burning such believers, and were giving them to the lions; but this did not stop these believers from teaching, and many believed and made it known, even if they knew that they would die because of their great love for God, and His Son Jesus; although I did not teach, I thought and lived as this teacher taught I should, and very often many of us came together in secret and talked this matter over.

It was in the year 155, when at last they had given Polycarp to the lions; but most of the people for fear of the Romans, said he was the cause of all the trouble, and for that reason they killed him, but we had our meetings just the same as before, and in secret, and we believed that in the future everybody would want to worship this Messiah Jesus, and to believe in Him instead of Zeus or Jupiter.

In the year 159 many of us through fear and slavery were driven from the sea, back a long way into the mountains; and as I was an old man, and feeble, I could not stand the hardship, so I lay down to sleep, and knew no more.

160-220—WOMAN 3.

I was a woman born of Jewish parents, and from the mountains in Hellas; the Romans called it Graecia. I was born in the year 160, and grew up in the mountains with my people, where we thought the Romans would let us alone; but when I was 25 they came into the mountains and carried off a large

company of us as slaves; and they took me to Rome, because, they said, I was beautiful, and then they sent me to Caesar, and he made me a servant in his household; but I was a slave, and had to do just as I was told or they would have killed me; many of my people were here, and we had a secret society, and when we could, we met and talked over all our private matters, but chiefly concerning our slavery, and our worship; we had a worship all of our own, we believed in Jesus Christos, as the Romans called Him; and we had some teachers who had heard those who had seen His Chosen Ones, and we had also some of their letters which had been written to others, and we believed in Him; but we had to be very secret and we could not do anything, as we were only slaves; but many of our people were discovered and had to suffer for this worship of God, because they would not burn a sacrifice to Jupiter; we believed that this Jesus was, and is the Savior of the World, and that some time He is coming again to take away those who trust Him; and we used the cross as the symbol of this in our worship.

It was in the year 200, and I was 40; and as I was old, Caesar had now thrown me off, and I was living some distance from Rome with some of my people who were slaves to the Romans; in the community in which we lived, we were called Christians, or the followers of Christos.

My life was not all that it should have been; I knew this from what I learned from our teachers; but I was not strong enough to face and resist the terrible deaths that I saw brought to so many others; I saw many, both men and women, rather than sacrifice to Jupiter, burned, and thrown to the lions, and I was terribly scared; and lost my courage, and it made me sad, and I talked to Jesus about it, and I knew that He heard me.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

In the year 220 Caesar's soldiers hunted us to kill us; so we lived in caves, and were nearly starved, and I was sick; I had had two children but they had been taken from me, and I did not know what had been done with them; I was in terrible pain, and I knew that I was dying, so I talked with God about it, and I knew that He heard me, and I went to sleep and knew no more.

221-295—MAN 4.

I was born in the year 221; my people were called Franks, and we hated the Romans, so we joined some bands of Huns and Goths, and when I got to be 45 we went into the eastern provinces of Rome amongst the Helenes, and took many captives, and spoiled their cities; and as we got to be stronger we would destroy all the Roman cities that we could.

We were a strong hard working people, and we liked our own country and people, and we did not want it to be taken from us, and then to be made slaves; there were many people north of us who we thought would help us to fight the Romans in the future; too, the Romans were a cowardly lot themselves; they would eat and drink till they were like beasts, and they did nothing but enslave others; it was their slaves, or the people which they made slaves of, who fought and worked, because the Romans had got them so that they feared them; but we believed that bye and bye these slaves would turn on their masters, and then the Romans would have to die.

The people which we had brought from Graecia we treated kindly, and did not make slaves of them, and they were as free as ourselves, and became as one with us; for we did not wish to harm them, but we took them to harass the Romans, and in the future we hoped to be strong enough to kill the Romans and be safe ourselves.

In the year 280, I had been listening to a man whom we had brought from Macedonia, who was born in Ephesus; and as a boy he had heard the teachings of some amongst his people, about a man Jesus, a Jew who had said that He was the Great Deliverer, and Savior of the world; but the Jews had hated Him because He would not fight for them, and free them from the Romans, so they got the Romans to crucify Him; but this man said that his people had proof that this Jesus had great power, and that after He was dead He came back to life again, and then He told the people that He was coming again bye and bye, to take away all those who had believed in Him; and this man said that he believed in Him fully, and he showed us a small cross, that he wore next to his body as a sign of this; and so I asked him many questions, and he told me a great deal about this man Jesus, and His life and work; and how in Asia, and in Macedonia, and even in Rome, many believed on Him, and were waiting for Him, but they had to worship him in secret, as the Romans hated them so; they killed all of them that they could find, but, he said, for all that, those which do believe, even if they are caught, will not sacrifice to Jupiter, nor fear Caesar, but will choose to die first for this Christos, as they called Him.

So for the last ten years we had been listening to this man, and we came to the conclusion that he was right, for he had shown us about the gods which the Romans worshipped, and also those of his own people, and of Graecia; and we knew that we also had a barbarous sort of worship amongst our own people; and we could see as he talked, that this worship was nothing but imagination; but still, most of our people still believed in them, because they did not want to worship anything that came from the Jews, as they despised the Jews.

It was the Roman year 295, and the Romans were now try-

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

ing to fight us, and take our country; and we were trying to get the Goths and Huns to help us; but I was now very old and could not fight.

The teachings of the man who was with us, but had died, who came from Ephesus, had made a great change in my life, and I would have liked to have been like him; but I wished that I might know more about this God, and Jesus, and what these things all meant; I would like to have been a strong Christian, and to have fought for these Gods, but I did not think that they wanted us to fight and kill each other for their sake; but if I had known just what to do I would like to have done it, for this Jesus was a strong kind man, and loved His people enough to die for them, when they hated Him as they did, and as I thought of this I went to sleep, and did not wake again.

296-376—MAN 5.

I was born in 296 in Rome; my parents were Jews from Smyrna, in Asia; these people had been driven from Palestine many years before by the Romans.

My people had belonged to a sect that was called Christian, (in derision, by the Romans,) and this society was for the worship of God, and Jesus; and not Jupiter, or Zeus; and those which belonged to this society had learned much from their teachers and from the letters of the disciples; and they firmly believed in this Jesus as a Deliverer and Savior; but my parents, with many others, were brought to Rome to do work on the stone for the great buildings which they were then building.

I became a man 30 years old, and as a Christian, I had to worship God in secret, because it was against the laws to worship any god but Jupiter and his associates; we had seen many

burned, and killed in a number of ways by the Romans because of this, but about 3 years before this, a new ruler, Constantine, came to Rome; and he thought that the new worship was the best, so he stopped the killing of the Christians; but they still persisted in doing this in some places, because the allied Romans hated the Jews so; but then we felt more safe, and we could have our places of worship where we liked; and it made our people think more of him as a ruler, for as slaves we were better if we were allowed to worship as we pleased; some people thought that this ruler did this so as to get our people to like him better, while he did not believe in it himself; it may have been so, I did not know, but we knew that if he would allow the Christians to worship as they pleased, all the people would be better for it, for all the Christians were kind, and wanted to do no evil; no man who worshipped God and Jesus would do evil.

Constantine had laws made that the people should reverence the Christian's God, and he stopped the worship of the pantheistic mythological gods; and the Roman silver that we had to trade with, was marked with the cross.

In the year 335 the Christians had many places throughout the land where they worshipped, because the terrible persecutions of the Christians had, in general, been stopped; and so now, a great deal of wealth had come to this cause; and it was then seen that if one wanted to be in favor with the Romans he must be a Christian; in the east where they had often had terrible persecutions, they now worshipped as Christians, because Constantine thought he would move the great city of Rome to the east, and the people there wanted to be in favor with him; but if there were many who did not believe in the Christian's God, though they would say that they did for a policy yet those who did believe, and were truthful to God, had increased in numbers and were doing much good.

I became an old man of 80 years, and we had had other rulers since Constantine who had died; and these had again persecuted us because of our Christian principles, but this could not now be stopped, because so many believed in these truths; and too, the Romans did not pay as much attention to this now, as they did about their warring with other nations; as the Franks and Huns were making terrible wars on the Empire in the north and west; many of these people had joined together and they were driving the Romans out and taking their possessions, but I was too old to fight, so I lay down to rest.

377-459—WOMAN 6.

I was born in Rome in 377; my parents were called Franks, we were not Romans, but we were looked upon as being equal with them, and there was a treaty between these two peoples that they would not fight each other.

My father was a soldier in the Roman army, and so my parents had come to Rome, and I was now 20, and these were terrible times; it was one continued fight all the time; the Huns the Goths, and others from the north had joined together, and had nearly reached us to take the city; while from the west the Vandali too, were near at hand; everyone hated the Romans, and all said that they would do to the Romans as they had done to others, especially the Jews.

It was in the 400; there had been a terrible war, and my father had been killed, and some barbarian soldiers carried me off to the north, and I became the wife of one of the soldiers; these were terribly strong and warlike, but my husband treated me well, and I learned to like him.

The Romans had said that these people were like beasts, but I did not find it so; they said that they did not want the Roman country, but that they wanted peace, while the Romans

only wanted to fight, and make slaves; so all these northern people determined to kill them out so that each people could have its own country, and not be slaves to others.

I had learned to know a great deal about the Christian principles and religion in Rome when I was there, concerning God, and Jesus or the Christos, but I did not understand it all; I went to their gatherings, and listened to their teachings, and I believed as they did; and I wished that I knew more, but my father had said that it was good for women and children, but not for soldiers, as he had to fight and kill people; but up here it was different; these people had a god that they talked about, which they called Odin, and his wife, a goddess, was Frigg, and their children were Thor, and others, and they sacrificed to these; and this all seemed very foolish to me; I did not know much about Jesus, but He was better to go to when in trouble, than these.

In the year 420 we heard that Rome was nearly killed out; many of the Romans had gone west on the great sea to other lands, so there was not much fighting around us then as there had been, and we had farms, and vineyards, and we raised cattle, and built our own cities; we lived at this time under the feudal system, and in this way protected ourselves from thieves and marauding bands.

I had a son who was now 20, a big strong man like his father; but he did not want to fight, or be a soldier; he wanted to write and learn to make books; he talked so much about it that we said, "You go to Rome where they have everything." And so he went there; he knew how to carve wood beautifully, and also how to build houses, so he could work and learn.

We had other children, but they wanted to stay here, as we all loved each other very much; and their father said that he

was glad that he had gone to Rome and stolen me away, and I was glad too.

I had now reached 63 and I did not work much, as my children took good care of me; and my son had now returned from Rome, and he said that he had to leave Rome because the Vandalli were going to burn it all up very soon; but he had learned a great deal, he had had plenty of work, and he had studied and become acquainted with the Christians; and they showed him all about their religion. and then he discovered some Jews, and they taught him many things; and he heard the letters of the disciples often read, when the people met together, and also of others who had learned of these; and these letters that he had read, told him all that the life of Jesus meant to all people, not only the Jews, but to everybody, for this Jesus sacrificed Himself for the whole world.

And now my son was more interested in this than in anything else, and he said that some day this belief in this same Jesus was going to conquer the whole world; his father laughed at him, but the boy was in earnest, and he said that he was going to teach this new religion to everybody, because it made a good, kind, and loving people; and too, because he was sure that this person Jesus, even if He did come of the Jews, was the real and true Deliverer; and that he was not going to have any wife or children, as he wanted to work at this all he could, and to teach others.

He said that the so called Christians had become so powerful in Rome, that they compelled all to do as they wished, or they would persecute them; and it was said that this political faction acted as badly with the true Christians as the Roman people had done not long before when they reverenced Jupiter, and tried to compel the Christians to do the same, or they would burn them, or throw them to the lions, if they did not burn

sacrifice to Jupiter and the rest of their many false gods; my son thought that this would lead in the end to the true Christians becoming slaves again to those who were in power and had great authority; and he said that this was done to make the true Christians stand in fear of political authority.

Now, these Christians did not fear, but those who wanted to make slaves of them, said they were like children because they did not want to fight; and so they thought they were afraid, like sheep, but the true worship of God made them to be very strong and courageous; at this time I was taken sick and died.

460-540—MAN 7

It was in the Roman year 460 that I was born, and my parents were peasants in the north of the wine country; when I was a young man we heard that Rome was no more, the Vandalli had burned it, and had driven off many, and those left were subject to them.

Later on I was in what had been Rome; the old city with its wooden buildings was nearly destroyed, but the stone and brick buildings still stood, and I worked on the stone ones, rebuilding them for use; before I came to Rome, I had listened in the north to the teachings of men and women who called themselves Christians, and they were a good people; and so I had become one myself, and I found that this sect was very powerful in the south, and they exercised great authority, and were very tyrannical, and not as the kind and patient Christians which I knew in the north; and over all this body of Christians there was one called the Father, who ruled and had full authority, and all acknowledged this and did as he said.

The Vandalli did not molest these Christians much, and let them have their places of worship; but when they went away,

they took many of these Christians with them, and in this way they carried this Christianity into the far west where they went; but what seemed strange to me was, why this Father should exercise such great authority over all who wished to be Christians, even to punishment if any disobeyed his dictates, yet he dared not be too severe because he stood in the fear of the rulers of the land.

About the year 500 there was not as much fighting near Rome, and the place was really governed by the Father and his associates; this Catholic power, as it was called, was not the government in the place of the old Roman power which had been destroyed, but it acted through the different heads of the new government, in reality controlling much more effectively than the actual government itself.

And this was what the old Romans used to call the worship of Christos (in derision), because they hated it so much but it had become the power and authority, and with the government as one; and it reached out beyond Rome, and began to make people recognize the Father as one of the heads of power; but I could not work, my children were all grown up, and I was 30 years old; and as my life had been full of trouble and I was weary, I lay down to rest and did not awake.

541-631—MAN 8.

Born in Rome in 541, I was a young man living in Venice in 556, and I was a Gondolier on the water; my parents had been obliged to leave Rome because of the conditions there; my parentage was both Jewish and Greek, and as we were poor, we were hated and treated as slaves, so my father with his family made his way to Venice; but here they thought he was lying and trying to hide his wealth beneath a guise of poverty; so after repeated trials of extortion for various false

MAN

reasons, as they could get nothing from him, we were treated badly, till both my mother and father died, and then they did not molest me.

Both my mother and father had been Christians, and myself and the other children who had gone away, were brought up to reverence this religion, although our family disliked the stern laws of the Father compelling us to worship as he wished ; so we, who were really in earnest, would gather in some places by ourselves, and some would read some of the disciples' letters, and some would teach us who were younger ; but this was against the law, so we had to be quiet about it.

I married, and we had many children, and I lived in and about Venice all my life ; I tried to live a life as near to God and His Son as I possibly could, till I was 90, when I died trusting Jesus to awaken me.

632-729—WOMAN 9.

I was a woman born in 632, and I was 97 years old when I died ; I was born of parents who came from the far north beyond Saxony, and we came down to north Italia in Lombardy where we could have vineyards.

I married and had many children, who grew up and married, and went away.

The most of my life I spent in the very northern part of Italia in the mountain passes, as my husband was a herdsman, and we had large flocks of sheep and goats ; it was very pleasant in these valleys, although some of these mountains were always covered with snow and ice. My parents came from a land where they worshipped Woden as a god, but afterward we heard of God as Jesus, and while my parents did not seem to understand it when I was young, I went with friends who told me all

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

about it, and I became a Christian, and taught it to my children.

My husband was already a Christian when we were married, but he was hated because the people knew that he was descended from the Jews; but he was kind, and we had a happy life; but in the big cities of Rome and Venice they compelled all to worship as the Holy Father (Pope) dictated, and those who disobeyed this law were liable to punishment; but we were a strong and independent people, and as we lived in the mountains, we thought as we pleased, and they did not trouble us; we had some of the letters of the disciples of Christ, which were read to us at the gatherings of the Christian people, such as they used in Rome, and these were written in our language; and so we used to come together and read them, and these told us how Jesus was the Savior of the world, and was coming here again in the future, to take away His own people who believed this, and we were very happy in this belief, and this was my past life, and I died trusting in God to do what He would.

730-790—WOMAN 10.

My parents told me that I was born in 730, and I lived till 790, so this made me 60 years old.

I was a peasant all my life.

My parents came from northern Greece, and we lived in the mountain passes of the Alps all our lives; we frequently heard from strangers passing through this country how the people outside were fighting; and great cities were being built; and over all the country outside the great power at Rome was being felt; the people did not fear slavery as they did in the olden times, under the Romans, as the power there at this time

was principally a religious power, and the Father or Pope was the chief adviser.

The people paid tribute to Rome, although they did not see why they should; but this did not trouble them as much as the fear that unscrupulous men would get in power there again, and that they would irritate and persecute the people as before; but the country all about us was being settled, and the people in the big cities were getting stronger, so we felt that not much trouble could come to us.

My father's family were not Christians, neither was my own family, save myself; at an early age I listened to the teachings of Christians and accepted this belief, and continued strong in the faith during my life, but those near me would not listen to these things, and so the power of Rome coming over the land, made them feel bitter, and as my life was hard, I was glad to lie down and rest.

791-870—MAN 11.

I was born in 791, in the mountain passes in Suesse, but I left my land to come to live in the cities of the north; my wife was of the Francois, and we lived in a small village; my wife and children tended the goats and sheep, and looked after the vineyards, and I wove goat's hair and sheep's wool into cloth which we sold in the markets, in the larger places near by.

We knew that, all around us in the north, the land was principally ruled by Feudal Lords; these had been given large possessions, mainly from Rome, and mostly for service rendered in the wars; we got our land from these with the right to use it by paying tribute to these Lords, and they had to pay tribute to Rome, or they might be ousted from their possessions, and these given to another; sometimes the masters we served were fair dealing men, and sometimes they were bad; in any case we had

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

to work hard to get the silver to pay our masters, and have enough for ourselves.

We were all Christians in our family, and we went regularly to hear the teachings of those sent from Rome, from the Pope to instruct us, but we thought the laws too hard; and then there was talk of punishment if we did not obey these laws; there were many around us who were not Christians, and the Roman teachers tried to compel these, under threats of severe punishment, to obey these laws, whether they wished to or not, and this stirred up strife.

We used to gather in secret, and talk over these things, unknown to the teachers, but we had to be careful, as there were spies all about us.

In 870, after the death of my wife, I had a severe illness and died.

871-961—MAN 12.

I was born in 871 and lived to be 90 years old, and I was strong and well till death.

I was born in a valley of the Alps, of parents who came from Allemanne; these died when I was young, and so with older brothers and sisters, we moved back to the Rhine, where we should not have to work so hard, and where it was not as cold.

I married and we had a large family; owing to an unrest among the people because of the despotic laws from Rome, our attention was called to the seeming differences between the words of the WRITINGS or SCRIPTURES as these were read to us, and the laws at that time; we attended all gatherings, and listened to what was said, and it caused all my family to become exceedingly strong in the Christian belief; but we had grave

MAN

doubts about its being right to try to compel us to do certain things which seemed contrary to these Scriptures.

We did not have the Scriptures in our own language, these were only in Latin, and the MONKS would listen to no plea from us about our dislikes ; we must obey the Pope, the law, and do as they told us, or we might be punished in some severe manner.

There were many of us who often gathered together in secret, and we tried to get the Scriptures in our own language, and we offered protests against the tyrannical methods of the Monks ; our secret places of meeting were discovered, and we were warned to discontinue ; any Scriptures found in our possession were taken away and our protests passed unnoticed, and while conditions were thus, I died.

961-1061—WOMAN 12.

I was born in 961, and up to the time when I was a young woman of 20, I lived with my people in the mountains of Suesse, where they had been driven by the laws of Rome from the city of Venice ; one day some traders passed through the land, and said they were lost ; they had come through some of the mountain passes, and they came to where we lived ; they were pleasant, and so we tried to help them on their way ; and there was a young man with them who seemed to like me very much, so he asked my father for me, and as my father had many children, he consented to let me go ; he had learned that both the young man and his father were in the company, and that both of them were well to do, and able to care well for me.

My mother was dead, so my father said to me, "No matter where you go, you must try and bring up your children to be true Christians, even if this is to disobey the laws of the land."

I did not ask the young man what he thought about

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

Christianity, as we had to be very secret about our worship of God, in whom we implicitly believed; but I knew that I should know sometime what he thought; the young man's father who was with the caravan, seemed very pleased with me as his son's choice, so he made my father a present, and they talked together; and this man said that they came from Greece, and they were going to France, where they could have vineyards; they had some wealth, and they had intended to stay and trade in the cities of Venice or Vienna, but they had heard that there were robbers about, and that these robbers would steal, and would then go to some one in authority, and say that these were heathen, and unbelievers, which they had robbed, and perchance divide the goods, and these would be allowed freedom, and the others if discovered, would be liable to punishment, perhaps imprisonment; and so in this way I discovered that these people hated the laws of Rome.

I was soon joined to my young man, and he became my husband with much joy and happiness; and we were wished well by all about us; we had plenty of wine and dancing, and then I went away to France with these; and after that some of our party went away and left us, but my husband and myself settled in France near a city called Lyons; my husband was a weaver of cloth, and a trader in woven goods as well, so he taught me to weave and I worked at it; and he could carve wood beautifully, and so after awhile he stopped weaving, and made a good deal of money by his fine wood carving; and it was not till I had been married a long time, when one day I happened on him in a secret place, and he was talking in a low voice, as though in prayer, to some one; so I listened, and I heard him use the word Jesus, and he talked as though he had a terrible burden on his mind, so I went away and thought this over, and then I went to him and asked him about it; at first he seemed afraid,

and then he asked me, if he could trust me, and if I would die before I would tell anyone about what he might tell me, and I said yes, and then he said that he was not wholly a Jew, but that his people came from Asia a long time ago; they were driven into northern Greece by the terrible cruelties of the Romans at that time, because they wanted to worship God, and would not sacrifice to Jupiter; and then a new ruler came to Rome called Constantine, and he defended the Christian worship; and his people were let alone for a long time to worship as they pleased, but there was a great deal of fighting going on all the time about them, and many others who wanted to get the country; but they worked and traded until they got a little wealth, and then there came to them men who tried to compel them to pay tribute to other powers from the east, and told them if they did not, all they had would be taken; and then these would drive them out; finally, it got so bad that they took all they had, and came into the mountains where we were; but, he said, we had in all these years belonged to a secret society, and our sign was the cross; we had the Scriptures, and we believed Jesus was the Son of God and the Deliverer of the world from sin, and, as He knows all about us, we can go to Him in faith and ask Him for what we need.

How I did love my husband, as he told me this; and then I told him of the secret meeting places of my own people, and how my father and mother too, were Christians, and how I would gladly give my life for the sake of Jesus if I had a chance; and this made us both very happy, but my husband was very sad because we were so oppressed by the Pope and his tyrannical laws, as the Pope in Rome now had all authority as the head of the government, and also as the head of the Holy Catholic church; and too, we were afraid to have many chil-

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

dren because of these hard conditions ; but we had one son, and he grew up to be a good man ; he married and had one son, and one day as I sat in the sun thinking of the past, I fell asleep.

1061-1179—MAN 13.

I was a weaver of cloth, and the only son of my parents who died when I was young.

At about 20 I began talking with my friends about the terrible cruelties and conditions in which we lived ; we were treated like slaves, and it took all we could earn to pay the tribute money to Rome ; and then the common class of people were looked upon as dogs, and we were afraid of our lives ; we did not think all the cruel oppression began in Rome ; we believed much of it was due to the local authorities, many of whom were unscrupulous in their dealings ; we could not think as we liked, and we were all suspicious of everybody as our enemies ; and I said it was not right ; why were we slaves ? And who was the Pope to control us ? So I proposed to stop our secret meetings, and to speak in public, and to try and see if we could not rid ourselves of this great irritating pest ; we did not need this government, we could govern ourselves as well as Rome could, and use our own money for ourselves, as well as to send it to Rome.

My friends told me if I did this, I would surely be punished ; but I said, if I was, what would it matter ; in all great battles some have to fall, and surely this would be a great fight before long.

We were told that the Pope said he was the vicar of Christ, and yet we got nothing but cruelty, tyranny, and oppression ; there was talk that in some places there was torture, burning, and death ; and the land was filled with hatred, and suspicion.

This was not the way Jesus taught men to live who would follow Him.

The people who were true Christians were men and women who loved each other, and were kind, and not like wild beasts.

I called a public meeting, and told these things to the people, to see if we could not get some help from our troubles; and too, I felt that God would have me do this, and that in some way He would help me.

Later, as I became a very old man, I saw that I had stirred up plenty of trouble; I did not think a few years before, when I wanted to help free my people, and so began talking in public, that much would come out of it. I had only been talking a short time in public when I asked if there were any one who would stand with me in this fight for freedom; and to my surprise a great number thronged about me, and at once volunteered to take up the fight with me; and one man especially, who was a good man, and who was filled with love for God, and a great hatred for evil, Peter Waldo by name, said to me, "You are all right, but you do not speak hard enough against this terrible condition of things; you let me speak."

And then he did speak, and he set the people on fire; so much so, that the priests threatened to punish us, but they did not dare to touch so many; they had to send messengers to Rome, to know what to do; and meanwhile Waldo was preaching about the country, and the people loved him, and swore to stand by him, though most of them were afraid of the awful punishments which would be likely to follow this.

At this time I was too old to do anything, so I left all this to the other people who cared enough about God to see it accomplished, and I went to rest.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

1180-1240—MAN 14.

I was born in 1180 in Germany, and my life was one of sorrow and slavery; the awful conditions imposed on us by the laws of Rome were terrible; when I was a young man, some undertook to speak against the Pope and his rule, and they were made to suffer terrible punishments, and this kept the people quiet.

But sometimes they would break out, and the authorities could not stop them; but I had to work hard and bear it, and so I kept still, and I died trusting in Jesus as a Savior, and hoping that He would in time stop this great evil.

1241-1281—MAN 15.

I lived to be only 40 years old, and yet I was an old man when I died; I was born in Germany, and I stood for God, and tried to tell the people to fight for their freedom, and not be slaves to the laws of Rome; so they caught me and tortured me, and put me in prison, because I was a heretic; they would have burned me, but I was in prison so long that I was nearly dead; so it did not matter, and I died believing that God would soon come to the relief of His people.

1282-1357—WOMAN 16.

I was born in 1282 in Bohemia; we were compelled to bear the terrible burden of tribute to Rome, and the whole land was one of hate and sorrow because of the tyrannical laws of Rome; no one was allowed to think for himself, for if he did, he was sure to be found out and most cruelly punished for being an enemy to the Pope at Rome.

But secret societies abounded everywhere, and often at night I went to hear someone talk in some secret place concerning the truth, and the evil that was around us; we believed Jesus

was coming again, and perhaps soon; and we believed God would in some way right the wrongs of the people before long, though we did not know how.

Some of the secret societies were known as the Waldenses, and these had sworn to defend Christ, in an organization that began when Peter Waldo first dared to speak against the Pope of Rome and his laws; and these organizations sent out missionaries far and near to warn the people of evil, and to spread the truth.

And so it was, if the people had been all for God, the Pope could have done nothing; but there were so many who were afraid; and too, traitors and spies were everywhere, so that those who would have done good, were compelled to keep quiet; even my own family was divided, so I went to my last sleep trusting God to bring about the right.

1352-1442—MAN 17.

As a man I was born in Bohemia in 1352, and we were a strong home loving people; we had been taxed beyond our ability to furnish money to send to Rome; and because we did not want to bring bloodshed upon our land, we had refrained from trying to stop it; and too, there were so many traitors and spies among us, that no one was to be trusted.

I believed though, that as the burden was becoming so heavy, very soon even the traitors would begin to hate the head of the Roman power and the very name of Rome, as at that time many of those who professed their loyalty for the Pope and his interests had been punished without substantial reasons.

And too, this true Christian religion, which was taught and preached in secret, especially by the Waldenses, and which all right minded men agreed was God's way, and was denounced

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

by the Pope as being heretical, had a great many followers, and was getting stronger every day, but they did not dare to speak openly against the Pope.

But I had heard one young man, a wonderfully good and kind man, whose life had been fully given to the study of the records of the past, and the reasons why we should worship God in accordance with the commands of Jesus; and he said he wanted to stop the secret work, and that he would go out and preach to the people, and they could do with him as they liked; because he thought that the people ought to know these things; which were being kept from them by the powers at Rome.

In 1393 the good man Huss began to preach to the people openly; and as the Christians were very strong, and stood with him, the priests did not touch him, and so he preached and taught the people; but soon the traitors and spies got to work, and they caught some Christians whom they called heretics, and these they tortured; and this made the people afraid, so they caught and imprisoned Huss, and finally in 1415 they burned him.

It was terrible, but nothing could be done; but I believed that his blood would be as seed sown, and that from this there would be many others which would arise, but I could only await in hope, as I lay down to rest.

1443-1493—MAN 18.

I was born in Germany in 1443, and I lived to be 40 years old, and like all the rest of my people I had to suffer under the terrible tyranny of the Roman laws; but before I died I knew that the time was not far off, when this must fall, and not only would we be freed from its grasp as slaves, but the people were going to be able to worship God as they liked; and so I lay down to sleep in my complete trust in God that He would bring it to pass.

In 1494 I was born in Germany, under the usual conditions that had surrounded our people for many centuries, and with one of the most awful hatreds that was ever established in the hearts of any people; they had everywhere become as wild animals, and it was getting worse, when one day, in the city, as I passed the church, I saw a large gathering in front of it, and I saw that they were very excited; for one of the Monks whom we knew, called Martin Luther, had written a series of statements against the actions of the church at Rome, and had nailed them on the door of the building; this was in the year 1520, and he denounced the laws and actions of the church in a strong and powerful way.

We were amazed, for we did not look for a Monk to take this stand; but now this began to give us heart, who hated these conditions, and believed in the free individual worship of God, even as He intended us to do; it was not long till we had his words circulated amongst the people in our own language; and the authorities of Rome dared not touch him because of the influence of local authority, but sent to Rome to the Pope to see what they should do with him and his followers; but it was a long time before anything could be done, as the Pope was having a great deal of trouble elsewhere; we learned also that the Swiss had revolted against these very same laws, and also in Britain, the same thing was going on.

The Pope had now to go carefully, as those who were in power as the kings and minor rulers, were now taking a hand, and beginning to side with the people against this power; not so much because they loved God any better, but because they did not see why they should be obliged to obey, or pay tribute to the Pope of Rome.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

They tried very hard to condemn and burn Luther, but his friends stole him and hid him away, so they could not find him; and then councils began in earnest, and meetings that made the Pope fear; and so we were let alone, and as we grew stronger, it looked as if the rule of Rome was doomed.

This man Luther died in 1546, but before he died he was the means of the people having the Bible in their own language, besides many things which he wrote; and as printing had been established, we got them more easily than if they had to be written; too, another great thing occurred; we heard that another great Continent had been discovered away to the west, by the Spaniards; and so I lived 70 years and went to rest in 1564.

1565-1610—MAN 20.

I was a native of Germany, and born there in 1565; my parents were well enough off so that they wished me to become a great scholar; they had made a great deal of money in trade, and were able to supply all my wants, so they kept me at school.

At 20, as I had applied myself carefully to my studies, I began to realize the conditions around me; our land was trying to throw off completely the galling yoke of Rome.

Protests of importance had been presented to the authorities of Rome, and had been rejected; and since then those who stood for the principles of a pure, simple, and direct individual worship of God, through faith, without any Pope or other intermediaries, were styled Protestants; 55 years later these two parties, the Roman Catholics and the Protestants, were arrayed against each other like wolves; but as far as I could see, the Roman church would go down, because it had become a political institution, and the people as a whole did not want her tyranny; so having studied both sides of the matter in Germany, I wanted to know what was thought in the Netherlands, and in Great Britain.

So in 1590 I journeyed to Holland, where I found conditions in a very turbulent state; the troubles between Holland and Spain, and between these and England, were all that was talked about.

I went to England after learning all that I could about Erasmus, and his translations of the Scriptures, as this applied to all the written evidences of the whole doctrine, or Christian laws of the Church, as given by Christ to His followers.

In the past, it was not allowed that these should be in anything but Latin, but since Luther's time, when he translated these into German, it had been the wish of all countries to have these in their own languages; and they translated direct from the Hebrew and Greek, and not from the Latin; so knowing very well the history of Luther and Melanchthon, I now secured all the information that I could get of Erasmus, Zwingli, Calvin, and others.

I found conditions a little more quiet in England, but the religious feud was fearful; these two parties were arrayed against each other; but queen Elisabeth being a Protestant, the Catholics could do but little; their only hope was that when she should die, they then would have a chance, and I will not go further into the history of the times; it is enough to say that I hunted and studied everything that I could find; and as I knew Greek and Hebrew, I was able to read all that I could get that would give me any light on my search.

I had thought for myself from my 20th. year, at which time I was laughed at very thoroughly for being a Protestant by my fellow students, to be a Christian, but never till now, as I searched these records of the past, did I realize how much it had cost to bring this Great Salvation of God to Man; and as this dawned on me, I thanked God for His wonderful goodness, and prayed Him to open up the way very speedily, so that all people

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

might get to know, as well as I, what these things meant to them.

In 1603 the Queen died, and King James the 1st. ascended the throne of England; and the Romish church got another setback, for the King appointed a body of learned men to translate all the Scriptures which they could find, direct from the original languages; and they were told to search everywhere, for all they could find; and I heard this would very soon be completed; and I could see that if this should be done, and then put into the hands of the people themselves, the downfall of the Romish church was accomplished, for the nations would not be slaves to Rome without good reason. Very unfortunately, one day I met with an accident, and the surgeon said that I could not live; and even while he told me this, I went to sleep.

1611-1708—MAN 21.

I was an Englishman by birth, and was born in London in 1611.

At an early age I began to take a deep interest in the religion of Jesus Christ, as my parents were Protestants; there was a fight on all the time between the Protestants, or English church, and the Roman Catholic church, although there was now but little difference between them, as each of these were political powers, and it was a question of which one would dominate the people.

But things went fairly well until 1625; and as long as His Majesty King James the 1st. was on the throne, there was but little persecution of the Protestants; but when His Majesty King Charles the 1st. came to the throne we had trouble enough, so that in 1640 the persecutions were terrible.

In 1647 George Fox preached in public, and his followers, called Quakers, were fearfully beaten and persecuted; and I, believing as they did, that the Gospel of God was for all, and

that it was man's privilege to worship God as he should choose, joined them; and we were driven from the country; my parents were now dead, and taking my wife and little ones, we set sail for Holland, and there we found peace and rest.

We stayed in Holland till 1656, and then, having heard so much about the new land of America, we left Holland, and went to America, to the Massachusetts Colonies there; but even there we found we were not wanted; the same spirit of tyranny prevailed there, and because we wanted to worship God as we would, we were most cruelly treated, and then driven out; after this we went to Rhode Island, whither a man by the name of Roger Williams had gone 20 years before, after having been driven from the Colony in Massachusetts, for the same reason that we were driven out; and as we had heard that others had joined him, and that they had peaceful homes, we went to a place called Providence Plantations, and there we found a welcome.

In 1681 I was 70 years old, and my life had been a hard one, and I knew that I must leave all this very soon; but I was leaving behind me children who I knew would fight to the last drop of their blood for freedom and liberty to worship God just as they should choose. Some of the Colonies in the south were using the Negroes as slaves, but in general, those of the north were against this, as it was too degrading, and in opposition to the truth; it seemed, in my life, as though there was but little else in the heart of Man but the spirit of intolerance, and the great desire to control others.

The Colonies had a good deal of trouble with the home countries, and it was one continual fight to be able to do as we wished; but I had brought up my children to remember that the right to worship God according to conscience and liberty was far better than the memory of one's own land, with all its

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

bloodstained history ; so I died believing they would fight for the right after I had gone.

1709-1789—MAN 22.

I was born in 1709 in southern New Hampshire, and I died in 1789, after a life of 80 years in the eastern Colonies of America ; our lives were hard at this time, as I was a farmer, and we had hard work to live ; but we knew that we were making a new and independent country ; we had a good deal of trouble with the Indians, and England made a great deal more for us, but we finally became independent, and then the slavery of the south came creeping north, and threatened to make trouble ; but in spite of all these difficulties, as we heard the stories of the past, and the awful tyranny which our fathers had borne, we thanked God, and were grateful that it was no worse with us.

1790-1857—MAN 23.

I was born in 1790 in Connecticut, and died in 1857.

My story is such that as I look back on my life, I am devoutly thankful for what God gave me strength to do ; I had seen in my day the complete freedom of my country obtain, at a terrible price, from all foreign power ; it was a hard fight, but men of determination won it ; there was another terrible fight near at hand, and that was to do away with slavery ; that insidious serpent must go, it must never rest here, it has got to be crushed, it must go ; and I knew that within a short time men of God's will and purpose would drive it out, no matter what the cost ; the freedom to worship God became a condition with us, such as the people had passed through before, and the subjection of a single soul to slavery within the confines of such a land could not be right, and God's purpose must win.

As I looked back at my death on the wonderful things that had been accomplished, in giving us such freedom, how I wished

I could see those who had fought, and suffered so in the past, arise now and enjoy it.

At this time writing and printing of books of all sorts were with us, giving a complete history of the past; and we had the Telegraph, and Railroad and Steamboat lines, and many other new inventions, such as our fathers never knew; but it is better that I do not try to tell all the history of those times, but just enough to show that in my own life I stood firmly for God, and the right, and died having absolute trust in Him.

1858-1914 MAN 23.

I was born in the state of Massachusetts in 1858.

At a very early age I began to understand there was a Supreme Being called God, who was the Creator of all things, and who saw and knew at all times all that was transpiring.

I overheard my mother praying alone, and carrying her burdens to God in secret, and it made a very deep impression on my mind.

I was not a strong boy physically, and I was timid and hated rough sports, or anything that had cruelty or ugliness in it; and I would lie to get out of a whipping for doing something wrong in a fit of carelessness, or heedlessness, and then I would hate myself for being weak.

As a youth, I was interested in natural phenomena, and wanted very much to know the reason and the why of things in nature about me; but I lived amongst people who knew nothing, and cared less about such things; so I indifferently let such matters alone, till I became older.

But one thing ever and continually pushed itself forward in my mind, ofttimes unconsciously, until long afterward, when I would realize that my mind had been filled with the thoughts of God's creation, and His great power, and Jesus and His life,

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

as I had been taught ; and so I pondered these in my mind, though oftentimes I threw them away, because of the gibes and sneers of my companions at my simple innocence, if I ventured to ask a question about anything touching on this great subject.

I attended church, and went to Sundayschool, and I learned many things, chiefly because it was right that I should know, and a part of an education, but I never learned that it was ABSOLUTELY NECESSARY THAT I MUST KNOW from anyone.

I learned that to be a Christian was to be sentimental, and to believe in mysteries, theories, superstitions, and some creed, and to have plenty of emotion ; but more especially, God was supposed, (if you told Him that you had disobeyed Him, and were sorry, and that you repented and believed in Him) to have heard you, and would then help you in anything you might ask of HIM ; it made no difference whether it was the threatened loss of a bank account, or some other selfish motive.

I was never taught that I MUST FIND WHAT GOD WANTED, AND DO THAT.

At this time, revivals were held in the churches each winter, and I attended many, listening, learning, and becoming interested with a longing to understand what was a mystery to those who were trying to teach me.

A wave of religious enthusiasm overspread the country as Moody and other Evangelists went from place to place ; and in later years, as I watched, I discovered but little real truth resulting from this, not because of the fault of the workers, but because the plant did not grow where it was planted, as there was no soil.

As I grew older, I gradually learned the truth mixed with error ; I mixed with others, most of whom were wilfully Godless, and others careless, indifferent, and hypocritical.

At 20 I wanted to be a thorough Christian and not a make-

believe, but I did not know how; I got advice enough, but not a single person that I knew had desire enough concerning this matter to even talk in a businesslike way about it; NO ONE KNEW, AND WHAT THEY DID NOT KNOW, COULD NOT BE FOUND OUT.

So I soon got lonesome, and my life was a good deal of a burden; I tried to follow others, and did this so poorly that I was never a companion, and I hated myself for being weak, and not being what I ought to have been; I knew that I was a hypocrite and it made me vile tempered; in short, my Christian life was full of breaks and repairs; I tried to push upward and to learn, and I had to deal with the scum of the earth and this left its scars.

Little by little I pushed forward till in 1887 I went into a foreign field as a worker for God; I did not at this time, as I did afterward, know that I was unfit for such work, but I did the best I could; and meanwhile I was learning, my eyes and ears were always open, and my life abroad was soon replete, as of a storehouse filled with wonderful things; I studied Man from every standpoint; I saw Creation as it had developed through the ages, at last crowning its efforts by placing Man at the apex.

But I was still lonesome, I found no one to whom I could talk; wealth, fame, pleasure and amusement were the themes in which others were interested; I was exceedingly unfortunate in my life, as I longed to meet some who were really in dead earnest, as Luther, Huss, Rogers, Fox, or Williams.

I was very young during the rebellion in the United States; but afterwards when I read the history of that war, and read that because it was policy, many of the CHURCHES (?) were in favor of slavery, I was more than disgusted at such meanness.

Later in life, in my search to know the truth, I arrived at two definite conclusions, the basis of all others, regarding the

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

Truth and the Relationship between God and Man, as this was the only real thing or condition worth the effort to discover in life: and these were that THE LAW OF GOD MUST BE OBEYED ABSOLUTELY regardless of any desires of the human being, and that ONE'S WHOLE DESIRE MUST BE TO DO THIS.

Again, I was unfortunate, as the people with whom I had to deal, fell into two classes; the first would have nothing to do with being thought of as Christians at all; and the other class consisted of theorists; I found that the moral and religious organizations and institutions were replete with those who were wonderfully kind, and morally upright, but whose creeds consisted in substituting self desires for the will of God.

This had its influence upon me, and I became disgusted with a people forever crying for teachers, but too indifferent to learn, and always modifying God's Laws to suit their own convenience; and I sought to find one who earnestly desired to know and understand the TRUTH in all its fulness, as I had tried to fit myself to be able to render any assistance that I might be called upon to offer, but I failed; doubtless there were those who were as eager to find out the will of God and do it as others were to get wealth, but I did not find them, and I believed that I swept the floor clean.

During the years while I was in a foreign land, I was more or less in seclusion from the conditions of civilization, and so on my return I seemed to see this phase of life from a different angle than I would if I had remained in this condition, and I now studied civilization from a new view point.

I had studied African barbarism from the civilized side; the African from his own condition, as I lived and talked and worked with him; and civilization from his view point, and it would make volumes were I to write the details which passed

MAN

through my mind, so I sifted and grouped these details and got conclusions.

It was hard for me to estimate human beings, as I had no standard; so I waited until I discovered that I could use the TRUTH as a standard, not a man's idea of the truth, but THE TRUTH; and so by this I tried to measure each one, allowing each one to be his own witness; my results grieved me, the more so as I discovered that the time limit allowed Man to perfect himself was near, and I set myself the stern task of trying to awaken some one if possible to the conditions.

Through many of the later years I worked steadily as a mechanic, having given up trying to teach, as none really wished to be taught; they would endure being amused or interested in anything of no particular purpose, but the real truth was not wanted, as this had been practically ruled out of existence by ridicule; but this only spurred me on to dig deeper, and search farther, even if alone, and to discover the true way back to God out of slavery and sin; and so with these determinations before me, I now step out of this role.

MAN, THE OBJECTIVE OF CREATION,
ACCEPTED OR REJECTED

Prologue

My Friend :—

In the further fulfillment of my promise, to make plain to you the Pathway of Life, I now enter a new existence, and as a living human being of this century, I will now try to show you as clearly as I am able, the Whole of God's plan, as far as Man on this Earth is concerned.

This would be absolutely impossible for me to do by myself alone, even if I had the very best education that the world could afford, which I have not.

These letters are a complete record of my own personal individual footsteps, which I have made, am making, and shall continue to make until the end ; and what my complete record is, the same should be that of every other human being, as I shall try to show, as the way opens ; so it will be realized that I am not writing a scholarly treatise, but making an effort to reveal the real truth of all things, conditions, and times, as best I may for those who may follow after me.

No. I have not been alone, nor am I now alone.

When the first sensation came to me to try to make a record of the WHOLE OF GOD'S PLAN CONCERNING MAN ON THIS EARTH, as I could see it, the terrific responsibility and the magnitude of such an undertaking staggered me ; I knew not what to do, till there appeared to me TWO BEINGS, ONE AN ELDERLY PERSON, and the OTHER, A YOUNGER ONE ; and THESE TWO seemed to understand my condition, and then THEY showed me how THEY would place me between THEMSELVES, and thus protecting me, THEY would take

me back, back of all life on the earth, back and down into the cold and darkness, and through the unphysically lifeless conditions before the foundations of the Universe had any existence.

I was glad indeed for this assistance extended to me at a time when I felt so much in need, but I did not grasp the full meaning of it all, till I had thought a long time over the past; and then I remembered that THESE had come to me before, under circumstances something similar, and at that time had made me some very opportune offers of assistance, but as these had occurred in DREAMS AND VISIONS, I did not understand them sufficiently to heed them, and make use of these offers; but now it dawned on me all at once, the mighty power that was at my command, and I began to heed it, and THESE TWO have accompanied me all the way, and are still with me.

When I first started into the past, I was warned to watch carefully my steps, and to place my feet just where my GUIDE placed HIS, and so be safe; so I journeyed and searched carefully for my footprints in the past, if so be that they existed, and at last overjoyed I found them, and I examined them closely, and made sure by signs that I knew to be infallible, that they were mine; nothing could obliterate them; I saw that they were more durably fixed than the solid matter of which the Universe is made, and would last to the end of time.

I found these footprints and followed them.

Mechanically I watched for every step that I had made in the past through the long ages of creation, and down in those confines of physically lifeless creation in the cold and dark, and amid the thunderous roar and crash during all these ages, I searched on and on; I was cold, tired, lonesome and desolate, but spurred on by the great desire to know the road whence I came.

You already have the result of this journey up to 1914 A. D. and as we are not concerned with my personal history, and you

PROLOGUE

are also acquainted with the political and religious conditions of our present time and generation, so I need write but little concerning these; but I will rather confine myself to the subject that I have in hand, viz; to present The Pathway of Life, as revealed by The Light of Truth.

When I attempted the beginning of the writing of this letter, I found myself very much embarrassed; it did not seem as though I could possibly do it, it looked too stupendous, too majestic, and in my weakness I could see nothing but disaster attending any efforts which I might make; but then I remembered that ONE had, in the years gone by, told me that I should have the complete plan of God given to me, if I persisted in trying to know and understand it; and so this gave me hope, and then THOSE whom I already knew so well, and whom I have spoken of previously, came to me and showed me what to do.

And in a vision, later, my GUIDES made it apparent to me how they had been with me, in my searching in the dark past, in the lowest depths of God's created structure, in my mechanical way, for evidences of myself there, and that THEY had watched me climb step by step up into the light; I was also shown that THEY knew how I had climbed to a plane in this structure that was NEW, and that THEY also knew as THEY had seen me leap into this NEW structure from the OLD, into better lighted conditions, than I had had.

It was shown to me too, how, after entering this NEW structure THESE had seen me run quickly up the stairs, to get into a still better condition, and these stairs represented my personal existences which I had had here from 40-1914 A. D., as written in my last letter.

In the upper part of this building, at the top of the stairs, I discovered a door, and as I tried this, I found it very hard to open; and so I tugged at it, and in my efforts it came open;

this door had been closed since the beginning of creation, and I entered the room before me, and this is where I shall write my last and final letter to you.

In my first letter it was intended to show that the primary object of the Creator was to produce MAN.

In the second letter, to show that the Brain of Man was the objective point of Nature, to develop it to the point where it should become responsible for its knowledge, and its acceptance or rejection of God's Law.

In this letter it is intended to show that MAN MUST USE THIS HIGHLY DEVELOPED ORGAN, THE BRAIN, FOR THIS SPECIFIC PURPOSE ALONE, AS WAS INTENDED, OR HE RETURNS TO PRIMARY CONDITIONS AGAIN.

THE ROOM

I now enter a ROOM, and I am in a great hurry ; it is nearly EVENING, and I am in a hurry to find MY SHOES ; I have been tracing my pathway by reason of my own FOOTPRINTS, but now I am about to put on MY OWN SHOES, and make the rest of the journey in these. Eph. 6, 15.

This ROOM in which I now find myself has FOUR SIDES, and is square ; THREE OF THE SIDES HAVE TWO WINDOWS EACH, AND ONE SIDE HAS ONLY ONE WINDOW IN IT.

The position of this Room is at the BEGINNING OF THE CHRISTIAN ERA ; from this point, the WHOLE TIME OF MAN, FROM ADAM TO THE END OF TIME, is before us ; to the East Side lies 4000 years, and to the West Side 3000 years.

Each side of this Room represents an Epoch of Time, and Each Window represents 1000 years.

One of the sides with two windows faces the Northeast ; and one other side with two windows faces the Southeast ; one other

PROLOGUE

side with two windows in it faces the Southwest; and the fourth side with but one window in it faces the Northwest.

From within this Room, I will describe what I see from these windows, as they overlook all time and conditions, since the advent of Man on the Earth, till his end here and complete departure from the Earth.

With me within this room are THREE BEINGS; ONE a very Elderly Man with white hair and beard, and very benign face, though serious; I am acquainted with this ONE, He has been very definite and earnest in His dealings with me in the past, and although strict and very definite, yet He has been most kind and gentle with me; this in my vision is a symbolical representative of God Himself.

ANOTHER, but a YOUNG MAN is too with me; He is the Son of the Elder One, and while He submits all to His Father, the Father gives Full Power to the Son over All Creation; with these TWO I have had frequent and continuous intercourse in my visions and dreams, and it will of course at once be seen that this is the SAVIOR OF THE WORLD to me.

Still another ONE is with us, and this is one also that I have had much to do with in solving the great problem of Creation; this being is a YOUNG WOMAN; She is the symbolical representative of CREATION on the Earth, Life, and finally She stands for the Perfect Human Being which is to be the Bride of the Christ, the Son of God.

A very singular thing about these windows in this room, is the DIVISIONS of these windows; the First window to the Northeast appeared as though it had been intended to divide it into 12 parts, but the divisions were very very faint, and especially 2 were almost indiscernible; the Second Northeast window was similar to the first, but showed the divisions a little more distinctly, but still very faintly; 10 of the divisions of the Southeast

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

window were very plain and prominent, but 2 were very faint, and it was the same with the Second Southeast window, although in the latter, the intended 12 divisions were plainly to be seen; both of the windows in the Southwest side were very plainly divided into 12 parts, while the one window in the Northwest side, had no divisions at all; these windows stand as symbols of the LAW OF GOD TO MAN.

MAN UNDER THE LAW OF GOD

1st. 1000 YEARS

As I stand in the centre of this room, I look first through the first window facing the Northeast; and the Revelation of God, which has been placed in my hands, reveals to me that through this window I am looking into the past; and what I see covers the time and conditions of the first 1000 years of Man on the Earth, from Adam to Enoch.

If we take a stone, a plant, an animal, a human being and the Bible, and we place these before us and carefully study them, we have all that we need to guide us into the Truth.

What was necessary for Man to know, and what we would have been unable to discover by the study of the first four objects, was revealed to him by his Creator, in the Bible, the Revelation, or Word of God.

This is specifically for Man alone, it reveals the Origin of Man, his relationship to his God, the purpose of his development through a specified time, and his future destiny.

It is possible that there are mistakes, personal human prejudices, mistranslations, interpolations, and ragged imperfections and crudities scattered through this Book of Books; there is no definite reason why it should not be so, but the Law of God, the Truth, is there in all of its entirety.

PROLOGUE

So with THIS, I will now start at the beginning of the first 1000 years of Man, and note the prominent points during this time.

There is one single peculiarity which threads the entire Scriptures, binding them together, and causing these to differ from all other writings, and this peculiarity lies in the Symbolism, Types, Visions, Dreams and Parables, which are here brought forward ; and each plays a prominent part.

The first matter that engages our attention is that of Creation, and its division into 7 parts.

This is Symbolical of God, as being omnipotent over all time, and perfect and complete in all His work ; and it is a Type of the time limit allotted to Man in which he is to complete his work.

The first picture presented to us here is taken at the End of Time, 7000 years after Man's advent ; the other picture is taken at the time of Man's advent, and he has 7000 years before him in which to perfect himself.

The development of Creation was not stopped or suspended when Man stepped into the arena from the hands of God, nearly 6000 years ago.

Man was not complete with Adam ; he had yet to fit himself for his next position ; this was only the child of the man that was to be.

The next picture that attracts our attention is that of the ugly fight between Cain and Abel ; there was no authority from God pertaining to the establishing of a sacrifice, nor would it have been understood if there had been ; it was a case of ugliness and selfish animal ferocity, and as such AUTOMATICALLY LEFT ITS MARK ON THE MURDERER ; this act had been foreseen, and the resulting consequences provided for by God in a natural way, for science now knows that a human being during intense anger, hatred, and jealousy, is capable of automatically

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

producing within himself extremely abnormal, and even poisonous conditions; and this mark, under these conditions, thus automatically engendered, stands as the symbol of ABSOLUTE DEATH, as the act was in direct known opposition to God.

In connection with the pictures which are now passing, we discover that God has a line of ancestry purely His own, and not according to the line of descent as enumerated by human beings; the rebirth of each and all human beings, as many times as necessary, to complete the full time of Man, is a natural sequence, while the rebirth of those whose whole desire is to know God, and are known only to Him, and counted in His line of ancestry, are provided for, it being predestined where such may grow and develop in accordance with His will.

And this causes us to notice Enoch.

The historical narrative of this time is written in few words, and shows that both the language and the writing facilities were very poor and cramped, and in our pictures we note that this is in the Chinese idiograph form.

The Babylonian account of these times is a fair representation of the great labor necessary to place an historical, or current event in writing.

All human beings must occupy all the time from the original birth till the end of time; during this time some may grow faster than others and so become very nearly perfect before this time is complete, and such need to be held in check or retarded; and in Enoch was such a one, growing fast and reaching maturity ahead of the time limit, and then waiting in the hands of God for an opportunity to present itself for rebirth later on in God's ancestral line.

Thus we get our first view into this remote past; Man is then so little higher than the animal that any law of God would

PROLOGUE

scarcely be understood, while Nature is all the while working to develop the brain, so that it can receive better impressions, establishing better intelligence.

SECOND THOUSAND YEARS

My attention is now directed through the second window in the Northeast side; the panorama now presented to me is more extensive and my attention is held by the rapid changes executed in the pictures of the conditions and things during this period of 1000 years, so permanently affecting the human race.

This period, together with the former period of 1000 years form an Epoch, over which God rules from a distance, approaching Man only at intervals, as he becomes sufficiently able to receive communications through better brain facilities, by dreams and visions, Nature working with all her power to produce a pre-conceived type of Man at a given time.

As the first picture presents itself to my view, I note as in the previous ones, the growth of the mixture of races on the Earth.

There is the original yellowish Mongol type of which Adam was the first human, and still remaining unmixed with the others; there is the race of near-humans, in appearance very like the human being, but the animal predominating; there is the black race, and these are intermixed, or continue along the original lines; and this intermixture has caused among these large-statured, slow-thinking peoples, fearful conditions to arise.

The purely uncurbed animal traits of the one race, coupled with the higher intelligence of the other, and again combining with the vile, selfish, mean and degrading principles of a third, has produced a people now who are much worse than the purely animal, and the scenes enacted by these as the pictures pass in review, are too revolting to be recorded.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

My attention is now claimed by the man Noah and his family as he appears in view; I note the progress of Nature in having produced a man who unswervingly stands for God, and who is able to listen, heed and obey the commands of the Almighty in every detail.

I also note that the peculiar movements of the Earth, at this time, as previously, are conducive to life of sluggishness mental inactivity, and physical slothfulness, under a continuous tropical climate.

As the pictures pass, we note the REASON of the DELUGE, causing the destruction of all the human family and its allied connections, excepting the one family; this flood is produced first, by a terrific internal volcanic earthquake disturbance cracking the Earth, and allowing an immense body of water to enter the rupture; and again being blown out, this great disturbance slowly pushing the Earth's poles over nearly $23\frac{1}{2}$ degrees from its former position, through the century that followed; at the same time causing the gradual shortening of the days, the lengthening of the years, and producing seasons of climatic change; during this time mental ability was strangely augmented, and physical activity was phenomenal, while the stature of Man decreased; the birth rate and reproduction was high, and the people scattered far apart, carrying ingenuity, and mental and physical ability in all directions; they ventured south, and traversed an almost unbroken continent, though slowly submerging, to the East and finally some of these were left on what is now known as the Western Continent, which had been separated from its Western connection by a terrific rift running North and South and making it impossible for the return of these, or the repassing of others from the West.

The central Pacific continent finally submerged, excepting the most prominent peaks, and the African Continent was also

PROLOGUE

pushed farther West, first having been previously entered by the more daring of the mixed races which had descended through Noah's family.

The pictures are too rapid and varied to be described in detail, as this would occupy many volumes as a historical sketch; and as we are chiefly concerned with the ancestral line of God's chosen ones, I will not record the pictures seen, until the time of Abraham.

THE THIRD THOUSAND YEARS

I now look through the first window in the Southeast side, and a wonderful array of passing events transpires before my eyes.

Abraham now steps into view, and the wonderful events of his life are enacted upon the screen; I watch the marvellous display of the Nations of the Earth, and I am astonished that so much could have been accomplished in so short a time, as since the Flood.

The almost incredible ingenuity and talent now breaking forth in all directions, show what Nature is doing with the human brain, and nearly all are using this for purely selfish purposes; only a few dimly realize that this great power should be used for purposes of the Creator alone, and Abraham the first one of these, is accepted of God, after a thorough test, to prove to himself his fidelity.

God too, now accepts an earthly symbol of fidelity to Him, in a form of sacrifice, as He did with Noah, the first established, that had been a sign or symbol of an agreement or covenant, between man and man since the disagreement, and its terrible consequences between Cain and Abel, and He further establishes Himself in the minds of men by making Abraham a TYPE OF HIMSELF, and his son Isaac, the TYPE OF THE GREAT

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

SACRIFICE that is to be, as He shows the future to Abraham and explains it in pictures, such as he is able to comprehend.

Viewing the times of Abraham, from the 20th century A. D. of civilization, they seem crude, and Abraham's education as that of a child, but it is a far more brain-racking problem in science how he did discover, and could know by dreams and visions, the plans and will of God, than it is to know the engineering details concerning the structure of the Pyramids of Egypt; in one case the vast brain power is used for the right purpose, and the result is knowing God; in the other the brain power is used for useless and selfish purposes, and the result is nothing worth.

As the pictures speed past, I note Jacob, his prolonged selfish fight, and his final triumph over self, and his acceptance of God, and as Israel he becomes a Type of the Origin of the Law of God in the Earth, and his 12 sons to stand as the Actual Types of that Law, extending over Four Epochs.

The remarkable progress made in the knowledge of God through dreams and visions, up to, and including the time and life of Joseph, shows two things; the possible and scientific method of acquainting Man with the will of God, and the preparation of the brain for this specific purpose, and I now note that as this knowledge of God was pondered, reasoned and used, it became the proper food for the mental equipment, upon which to thrive, even as the proper nourishment would produce a perfect physical body.

And so as the reel unwinds, I anticipate the coming events, and I grow intensely eager as the first glimpse of Moses appears.

I watch the picture with the keenest interest, as nearly 3000 years have passed, and I am eager to know the true results of Nature's efforts; and out of obscurity steps this being, educated by man to go one way; and persistently followed

PROLOGUE

by Nature, and trained day by day, and step by step, almost unknowingly, until there emerges from this problematical being, a Man fitted to take the most minute details of the will of God from Him, and distribute these to the human family. Nature had done her work, and done it well.

I watched with unabated interest the passing of the events of the Nations of the Earth, as they wandered farther and farther away from the Light of the Truth, and with seemingly no hope of ever getting back.

Selfishness, crime, misery, slavery and corruption filled the Earth; Man conceived his own god, set it above himself, and worshipped it, and thus became a slave to his own self-made master.

I noted the swaying of the great African Continent as it swung still farther to the West, and as it did so, created a condition whereby the fleeing Hebrews passed across the Sea Arm on dry land, which disappeared under the tread of their enemies.

I watched the scenes of rebellion, hypocrisy, bickerings, anguish and trouble connected with the journeying of the Hebrews to Canaan and then I was interested in noting the conditions, as the Hebrews grew to become a Nation; I watched for evidences of the power of truth in the hearts of the people.

I noted her judges, and I was as eager as a child when I saw the prophet Samuel appear.

I noted with fear the turning away of the majority of the people from obeying the Law of God, as placed in their possession.

I saw these follow other Nations, and I saw them as they felt ashamed of their Tabernacle, and desired a splendid structured Temple, with magnificent ritual; and I saw them detest their prophets and Judges, and desire a king, and it seemed so heartless, after the care and kindness bestowed on them by a

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

Creator, whom they hypocritically pretended to obey, but I watched the Temple grow, a mighty and beautiful structure erected in silence, without the sound of hammer or saw, and even as I looked, the picture faded away, and I turned to the next window.

THE FOURTH THOUSAND YEARS

The cinematographic record had already started as I turned my attention to the view through the Second window in this side, and my attention was quickly riveted on the Hebrew Temple as it stood preeminently forth from among the myriads of millions of other structures and scenes so rapidly passing; the Light of Infinite Power stood above it, and the active obedience to the Divine Command in carrying out the specific directions concerning the Symbolic Sacrificial System, showed that God yet had those whom He knew were His own, fulfilling His plan.

And then I see the Hebrew Nation torn apart by internecine jealousy, and selfish ignorance.

I see the whole Hebrew people at war with themselves, and others; the city Jerusalem and the Temple plundered, and the symbol of Divine Power withdrawn; I see the great men of God arise, Elijah appears and fights for the truth, surrounded and followed by many others.

And as the people grow worse and worse, and the outside Nations seeing the weakness of this people, start tearing the Nation farther asunder, Isaiah arises and warns the people of impending disaster, denounces the national criminal selfishness, pleads with the people to return to God, and shows them God's plans for the future, but he is maltreated and finally murdered, and soon Israel is disrupted and carried away captive to Assyria, soon followed by the captivity of Judah.

PROLOGUE

I note the destruction of Jerusalem, and follow the exiles of Judah to Babylon; I watch Ezekiel and Daniel during captivity as they plead with God, fight for the truth, and try to encourage the people, and I see the pictures of the wondrous transactions which are to take place in the near future, according to the Divine Plan, as shown to these trusted men of God.

I see Israel lost amongst other Nations of the Earth; I see the remnant of Judah return to Palestine; I see the Temple restored, but with no Divine acknowledgment; I see the nations of the Earth swirl about this remnant of a Nation, wagging their heads, and jeering at a people whose reputed Almighty God could not save them from being torn to pieces by the **other** powers.

I see the prophet Malachi arise and plead with the people against the internal corruption and hypocrisy, and warn the people concerning the nearness of the coming of the Great Deliverer to the Earth, but only a few would hear him.

Murder is committed in the Temple, prophets are hounded to death, driven to desperation, and to live in secret caves and dungeons; the darkness of death as black as night begins settling down on this HOPE OF THE WORLD; the years roll on, the Nations of the East are finally driven to the wall by the rising Western powers; Egypt's supremacy wanes, Greece rises, and finally the great Roman power seizes and controls this multitude of jealous and warring Nations; she plants her iron heel firmly upon the East, and compels the remnants of Judah to obedience to the Roman Laws; she tries dealing with them pacifically, and restores again her Temple, but this is DESOLATE, and only a few, and these practically unknown, who remember or have any faith in the promises of God, as predicted by their prophets in the past.

And now I can scarcely wait for the years to roll by as the pictures pass, as I anticipate the coming events, and it passes through my mind, as I watch the scenes, that it seems so impossible that out of this cold, darkness, superstition, ignorance and death can arise ONE superior to all others who have lived here as human beings; surely the ancestral line of God is laid very deep, and as I am thus thinking, I scarcely realize the pictures pass, till the prophet John, to be the Baptist appears on the scene, and the scenes of the past now disappear.

These last two periods form the Second Epoch of the History of Man, and this Epoch is under the Law of God in the hands of Man, and THIS LAW IS WITHOUT LIFE, and SYMBOLIZED BY TEN.

During this Epoch, all that is expected of Man, that he may be pronounced perfect by God, and allowed to return to God, at the end of the Third Epoch, is made plain from the first teachings to Abraham, to the coming of the WORLD'S SAVIOR, by symbols, types and ceremony; the Temple arises, and forever disappears, as the individual human being takes its place, and Divine Power dwells, or desolation reigns, depending on the will of that one human being.

THE FIFTH THOUSAND YEARS.

It is with trembling, and a feeling almost akin to fear, that I now turn to the First Window in the Southwest side, as I realize that this is the first thousand years of which but two thousand remain at Man's command, in which to fulfill his mission here, forming the Third Epoch of Man.

Knowing as I do what is about to appear on the screen, it is not necessary that I should be agitated, and yet, the whole life scene, of the greatest event ever transacted on the Earth, is about to open up before me, and I am to see it, and watch the

PROLOGUE

living, moving characters whom I know so well, in natural conditions; I cannot help being agitated, and so with the most intense interest I single out the portions of the pictures I am so eager to see, letting the rest pass as of but little worth.

How real the pictures are, how quickly they pass, and before I realize it, many have passed by, and the Prophet John the Baptist is preaching, and crying to the people to get ready, as the Deliverer has come, and almost at once I see him introducing ONE to the people as the long expected SACRIFICE, the LAMB OF GOD, and presenting him to God through the baptism of water, the Symbol of Truth, and at once accepted of God.

I watch the pictures carefully to see if there is any deviation from the historical narrative that I know so well, but there is none; filled with the Spirit of Truth, and with His face set as a flint, He pushes forward to complete His mission; He, with three of His disciples as witnesses, meets and discourses with Moses and Elijah; these held in readiness by God, as witnesses of the past; to determine his future steps, and then he goes straight forward to the cross.

I watch Him as He accepts the condition, and pays the price of disobedience to God for all mankind, and opens the WAY for Man to return to God if he desires to do so.

I see the Angels of God snatch Him from the disintegration of physical decomposition in death, and guard Him as more precious than all else; THE FIRST PERFECT MAN THROUGH CHOICE. The First Human Being fulfilling all the requirements, and accepted of God, a pattern, and type for others as they must be to follow Him, and be accepted of Him when He returns at the end of this Epoch.

I see the TWELVE DISCIPLES, symbolical of the now TWELVE POINTS of the Law, as LIFE has been added to the

heretofore TEN POINTS of the old Dispensation, as they struggle with the great responsibility resting upon them.

I see the Jewish Temple finally destroyed, and the people scattered; I see the fearful conditions now, into which the new-born Christian faith plunges, I watch it grow in caves and hovels, and fight for life in the arena with wild beasts for the amusement of the people; I watch it finally emerge from out of this fearful maelstrom of corruption, only to be again throttled by the hydra-headed symbol of evil masquerading in the guise of Divine Truth.

I hear the awful cry for help, as the faithful ones giving their lives for the sake of truth, are crushed to the earth, and I hear A Voice saying, "you shall rest, there is only one day more, you have proven yourselves, and the Light of Truth shall be yours for a covering;" and this period closes, as the pictures cease.

THE SIXTH THOUSAND YEARS

My senses must have been numbed, as I so intently watched this last reel, and I must have fallen into a deep and profound reverie, for, although as I thought I was looking into the Second window in this side of the room, yet it must have been in meditation, for I saw a wondrous sight; appearing before me was a beautiful woman wearily hurrying in terror across a wide waste of wilderness, and pursued by a horrible beast something similar to a species of a crocodile, of enormous size and hideous shape; this beast could not quite overtake the woman, so he would fill himself up with water, and eject this, in large volumes from his mouth as venom after her to try to drown her; I could hear her cry in terror, as she tried to get away, as the beast would nearly engulf her, and then she would cry in a triumphant manner, "it may get me, but my child never, he is with

PROLOGUE

God, and is safe'', and then the ground would absorb the water, and the woman would continue onward in her flight to escape death from this loathsome animal ; I became so enraged over the matter that I came to myself with a start, and saw that the pictures had been moving some time on the screen.

The first picture I saw was that of many vessels crossing the Ocean to the New World, and carrying large numbers of people fleeing from the awful persecutions of the Old World, to find a haven of rest ; and then I understood the meaning of the vision.

The Spirit of Truth, being pursued by the hideous evil, in an attempt to destroy it, by the powers of the peoples of the earth, had, in her extremity, been provided with a place of safety in the wilderness ; and although her First Born was safe with God, yet she had many others whom the beast would seek out to destroy. Rev. 12, 13-17.

And again I see the faith of men in the Son of God, brought forward and the Truth sweep across the Earth, to every Nation, tongue, and people ; I note that all have an opportunity, even though they reject it, to know the Truth.

I see the great tumult and crash of wars practically cease, and men turn their attention to ingenious matters, commercial interests, and intellectual acquirements ; mental ability rises to a very high level along all lines of earthly progress, and at the same time, to a very great extent, learned abstract mental theories arise to supplant the Truth, and a condition of contempt for, and ridicule of, the Truth, arises.

I see Bibles printed and sown broadcast in every land and clime, I see church organization of every conceivable shade and value, by the millions, fill the Earth, and I see Man create a theoretical god or ruler, who is subject to Man himself, and who

is theoretically supposed to hear and do as Man thinks is best for his own interest.

And again I see the Nations break out in a jealous, selfish, ugly warfare; the whole world is engaged in it, and finally out of it arises a power to control all the others; and this power establishes itself on the presumption of being the great friend of humanity, and the self appointed authority in all matters, including personal liberty; and as this power progresses, and the real Truth in God is trampled under foot in man's lust for power, the Truth again appears, and this time with full power, driving the great and small, and the wealthy and powerful, and the poor and ignorant alike to the wall, and all earthly Power outside of the ABSOLUTE TRUTH is helpless.

I see myriads of millions of the peoples of the Earth, of all Nations, in fear, hatred, desperation and dread, cringe and try to slink away from the searchlight beams of the Truth; they cannot, and dare not try to oppose it, as it now seeks out all men filled with the Spirit of God, and places these in absolute authority by marking them with the Seal of God.

This condition exists for a time, gathering greater and greater force, all over the Earth, as the numbers increase, until it finally reaches a limit, and those who now appear as completely preferring God, are but few, and finally there appear no more new ones.

Conditions remain thus for a time, the ungodly world seething and raging over the lost power, and their inability to recover it, although these are not molested or tyrannized over, but they are compelled to cease tyrannical, selfish and slavish authority over others for the time.

As the pictures pass, and the years roll by, I note that for some time no others are added to those already marked, for

PROLOGUE

none of these have died since the first one was marked, although many have changed in a remarkable manner.

All at once I see a terrific flash across the picture; and toward the Earth, from all directions, comes a tremendous Light, and the whole Earth stands in awe, and wonder as the sealed ones now with a flash disappear, and are gone, and the rest of mankind is so pleased, that they immediately hold festivals, and have times of great rejoicing that they are now to do as they wish, and there will be none to trouble them at all, and so this scene closes; the WEEK is finished, Man has come, finished his work, and gone; there are no more human beings, all those left who might have been reckoned as human, now revert to the animal.

This ends the Third Epoch of Man, the DAY OF THE SON OF GOD, in which the Whole Spirit of God is transferred from the Temple of stone to the human being, and the human being returns to his Creator; the next Day is the Sabbath, with Man and God.

THE SEVENTH THOUSAND YEARS

I now turn to the last one window, in the Northwest side, there are no divisions in this window, hence no Law.

As the pictures begin passing across the screen, the people in the scenes presented, appear to be full of happiness; conditions which had been practically stopped nearly a century ago, are now revived, and the old powers of authority resumed; the people are too well pleased now that the Christians are gone, to begin any serious troubles with each other at once, so they celebrate, and different peoples send presents and gifts to others, and all seem joyous.

All at once the scene changes, for the whole Earth is full of distress, fearful earth disturbances are occurring; this con-

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

tinues for some time shaking the Earth from centre to circumference, and demolishing many cities, and destroying many lives, and then when this ceases, the most awful conditions arise amongst the people, they are worse than animals, each one is the very incarnation of evil, and as soon as one outbreak slackens, another starts.

As the years roll on, the people in a stupid, dazed, ignorant way, realize they have lost their last opportunity of rising any higher than they are; they realize they have thrown it away, and they know a judgment awaits them to answer for it, but they are too ugly and hypocritical to admit it, and this makes them savage as they see plainly they are responsible for their own conditions.

After many centuries, churches, temples, mosques and cathedrals, still stand, and are patronized by the people, in a godless, meaningless form of worship; thousands of creeds, ranging from Hinduism and Confucianism, to an imitation Christianity claim their votaries, each fighting the other like demons as being superior, in this slum of iniquity, and they ignore the fact that the truth has gone, and pretend to believe in their own power to furnish such gods as will do what they wish; but conscience torments them day and night, although none will seek to do differently, even though they realize that the judgments of God will certainly fall on them, as they know from the fulfilling of the promises of God in the past.

And so the people hate God more and more, and they become more and more evil and selfish, destroying each other until only the strongest survive, and as the years pass by, terrific Earth convulsions take place destroying them in great numbers, until finally, by reason of the natural upheavals, and fearful Earth disturbances, all life disappears, and the scene closes.

PROLOGUE

This is the end of the last Thousand Years; disintegration of the Earth has already set in, and a new creation is now to begin, but with this we have nothing to do at present until after the final judgment of all mankind which is to take place; but in order to approach this subject, and numerous other necessary features connected with the Divine Programme concerning Man, I must alter my position, the time being the same, and as one of 1914, finish my last letter to you.

THE GOSPEL OF JESUS CHRIST, AND ASSOCIATE SUBJECTS

As I turn from the scenes of the last window, I discover My Own Shoes and put them on, and take up a position in which I am surrounded by the achievements of science, philosophy, art, literature, religion and the Truth.

All that I shall use of these will be what is necessary to delineate certain facts intimately connected with Man, as a creature of God, and thus present the truth.

The construction of the Human Body, Thought Transmission and Will Power, Parables and Mental Growth, Dreams and Visions, Prophecy and Prediction, Symbols and Types, are all subjects vitally connected with the Origin, Development and Destiny of Man.

The Perfect Man is the highest possible achievement of Nature on this Earth; he is coequal, in miniature, with God, when he leaves it, or he does not leave it as an independent being.

There is only one Standard with which to Estimate and Measure a Human Being, and this is the TRUTH, THE STANDARD OF GOD.

This Standard is the same, whether applied by God the Creator or Father, His Law or Word understood, written, or

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

personified, or by Nature through Creation, as each of these three is God, but representing Him in a different manner; and the Truth is the only Standard whereby one human being may estimate or measure another correctly.

God does not deal with human beings in numbers, bunches or organizations, He deals with the individual personally; if He appears to deal with aggregations, for any reason, at any time, it is because these are made up of individuals, each of which with whom He deals, the individual is the unit, not the aggregation.

There are FOUR LAWS or POWERS, in effect and in operation, as recognized by God in the Earth, as Instruments with which Man fashions his existence here, these are The Absolute Truth, The Absolute Enmity to God, The Knowledge of Will Power, and The Mixture of these Three in any or all proportions.

“The proper study of mankind is man,” so in order to be clearly understood, I will first introduce the subject of the Construction of the Human Being.

CHAPTER I

The Human Body

In the physical construction of the human body, there are 3 divisions of systems, and each of these divisions is divided into 2 parts,—making 6, if a human being remains here, after the allotted work week is finished, this 6 pertaining wholly to things and conditions, of the earth, of Man's work time here, this is all that he has, and he is chained to it; but if one has prepared himself to cross the line into the next higher condition, he has already taken the 7th part, making 7 in all; this 7th part being the preparatory entrance to the supreme conditions of the Infinite realm; it is very necessary to remember this, as it will be needed later—these 7 parts have 7 elements each, and all are regarded as being physical, excepting the 7th, the 6 parts taken singly, might be named, Material-Animal; Animal-Mental; and Mental-Spiritual, in the ascending scale; the lower divisions work to sustain the higher, while it is the function of the higher to govern and control the lower, through naturally acquired power, and ability, from a superior source, this superior source being the Supreme Infinite Existence, with its 7 attributes.

To be better understood, the last, or highest physical condition called the Mental-Spiritual, is spoken of as the Soul and Spirit of Man, or the Ego; the Soul being the receptive Infinite-Light-Power-Vibrating-Ion-Electron, having 7 attributes, and paralleling the 7 attributes of the Infinite Existence; it is the function of this Soul-Capacity-Receptive-Condition, to receive

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

message-instruction-impression, as power, from the Infinite source, to govern and control all else of the human body, if allowed to do so by the human will; it also receives all impressions made by the active Spiritual Energy of the finite source, the Spirit being the high active mental ability of Man.

Should a justified soul cross the line of Infinity, to endure, the spirit will attend it, and the spiritual impressions previously made will still remain, as these do not conflict with the Infinite Cause; but if one soul not justified, attempts to enter this realm, the Light of Truth, will destroy the physical-spiritual-record, and the Infinite Principle, that was in the Man, returns to the Infinite Existence.

As the physical systems should be controlled by the Mental powers, so the whole physical body should be controlled by the soul, as the soul is active, as well as passive.

As the lower, or material-animal systems of the human body, are in touch with, and controlled by, the higher, or mental powers, through the central station, the brain; so the entire physical body, including the soul-spirit, is in communication with a higher power, God, through a central point in this central station, in this material-spiritual body, and should be controlled by this higher power.

When the physical body, in a natural living condition, is quiescent as in sleep, in a natural way, to all outward conditions, and the will of the person has ceased to control for the time being, then the soul may be easily communicated with, and certain things made known to it by dreams or visions, and a record made.

As long as the directing and controlling power of the whole human fabric, is authoritatively held by the soul, all is well; but when such authority is held by the animal division, the

THE HUMAN BODY

results are disastrous, as the higher powers then become as slaves to the lower animal passions.

THE SYSTEMS OF THE HUMAN BODY

The Brain is the central organ, which should direct and control, the whole animal body, receiving dispatches from any or all portions of the body, over the wires of the great Nervous System, concerning their needs; any trouble, or warning is also telegraphed to this organ, and in turn, the brain sends back such aid as is possible, by sending a message to all the other Systems of the body, to help as they may be able.

The Brain in the Animal Kingdom, is not only the great telegraphic station, for the simple bodily economy of the individual, it is more; it is the central station, to which messages may be sent, and received, from the outside; any message from the outside source concerning the body, sent from the existing laws which govern the Animal Kingdom, may make itself felt, known, understood, or to be heeded, depending entirely upon the construction and ability of the brain, to receive such a message, in the body through this central station, throughout the whole animal world. The animal world does not realize or comprehend this, Man alone knows.

This is the basis of all animal instinct, not only are the animal instincts in Man fully developed, but in Man it is more; Man realizes all these things, comprehends them, and also that he can, and does receive messages from an infinite source direct; the Animal Kingdom below Man cannot send a message to Man, but Man can send messages to the lower animal world which are received to some extent, but not realized; and Man may also send to, and receive messages from a higher source than himself, and also from man to man.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

The second part of the Material-Animal Division, with the Systems of the fully developed human body, number Seven, as below:—

The Sensitive System.

The Digestive.	The Reproductive.
The Locomotive.	The Respiratory.
The Circulatory.	The Nervous.

The Reproductive System is the principal System, until the Sensitive supersedes it, of the whole living world, of both the Animal and Vegetable Kingdom, although in the latter the seat of sensitive power is not centralized, but is distributed in order to be more easily influenced by the actinic rays of light, its source of power, and this in turn controlling the other Systems; all other Systems in the individual unite together in maintaining and rebuilding the Sensitive System, that it may efficiently control these others to work for the especial benefit of the Reproductive System; there are always the two sexes, either in combination, or separate, which work together for this end.

The Digestive System, is the second great System in the economy of Nature's living productions, although in reality it is coequal with the Reproductive System; its function is to take of Nature's crude material, and transform it into the essential elements necessary to maintain, rebuild the body and sustain life.

In Man the highly organized Respiratory System, is the third great System of the human body.

It appears as though it is through the wonderful Circulatory System that we have Life, and it is no wonder that the world has given to the heart, that wonderful piece of mechanism, which gives to a marvelous life sustaining fluid its

THE HUMAN BODY

impetus through the body, the title of being the seat of all the affections; but, were it not for the Respiratory System, all of this would be useless, and the blood of the body would simply be a poisonous inert fluid, were it not for the magically living principle that it acquires as it becomes renewed, through coming in contact with the oxygen of the air in the lungs.

The perfected Circulatory System, is the great dispenser of life, through distribution of the necessary material elements, to the human body; from the tiny germ of life, onward, the function of this System is to take all of the necessary material to build and keep in repair this complex organism, the human being, as prepared by the Digestive System, by the authority of the Sensitive System, and it distributes this, clarified, purified, and renewed as the central organ of the body; the brain, directs, thus always maintaining and reconstructing, and renewing the body to completion.

The Nervous System, next in order, is that remarkable System of telegraphy in the human body; nothing, from the time the seed is planted, until the grown and developed body dies, can go astray, be in an abnormal condition, want or suggest anything, but that it is immediately telegraphed to the central station, the brain, and warning or advice is at once sent out along all of the lines for some one, or all of the Systems to at once begin the work of aid, or repair; and it also plays a very important part in the conserving of magnetic power, which at will by the brain, may be projected at a distance, for a definite purpose, as a magnetic influence, and is receivable by any parallel perfect equipment.

The Locomotive System, comprises all of the muscular movements of the body not necessary in any of the other Systems, and is noticeable more particularly in crawling, leaping, swimming, flying and walking, together with the

various movements of the limbs and appendages of the animal body. This System as especially designed and used, is for the defense of the body from enemies, and for journeying for food, and climatic conditions, and is in all of its movements subject to the authority of the Sensitive System, and perfected in Man contingent to his needs.

As the growth and perfection of the Sensitive System is completed, and instinctive control, an outside influence, merges into automatic reasoning power in Man, by reason of the cinematographical-mechanistical-registering-faculties, the physical becomes subject to the mental through self-will. The Attributes and Elements of the two parts of this second, or Animal-Mental division System, are here as appended.

Passion.

Sight.	Hearing.
Touch.	Smell.
Taste.	Voice.

These are the Attributes of the Sensitive System, and it is in, through and by, these Attributes that this System is able to provide for, and control the other Physical Systems of the body.

It is to this System and its attributes, that the lower System must look, and be dependent for existence; these Attributes are developed to a greater or less degree, depending as one ascends or descends the scale of the Animal Kingdom.

Scarcely any Attribute is noticeable in the lowest of the Animal creation, except that of touch; while in the highly developed human being, every Attribute is most beautifully developed.

It is very evident the part that each of these Attributes plays in the economy of man, but one must in passing, take note

THE HUMAN BODY

of the last or highest one, as this one contains very important Elements.

The Attribute, Passion, which is but little more than a term for physical action, denoting refusal or acceptance, in the lowest forms of the Animal creation, is brought to paramount perfection in Man, as embracing the beginning of the high mental qualifications. Appended are the Elements of Passion:

Mind.

Vigilance.	Fear.
Providenc.	Anger.
Affection.	Jealousy.

These Elements form the highest plane of the Animal Kingdom, these are governed by instinct, and the Animal may reach into the Mental Reasoning state, but not far, as it does not know that it reasons; too, these Elements are of a much higher order in Man than as given here; these as appended, are so given to show a more distinctive line between the reasoning knowledge of Man, and the instinctive dependency of the Animal; and it is here that the Cinema process starts into operation, and later when perfected in Man, carries a Picture Record in each person, of each such individual life, that at any moment may be read at will.

These Attributes and Elements form the Second Division of the Human Being.

The Third Division relating to the construction of the Human Being, embraces the Mental Faculties and Moral Powers; the Mental Faculties will be noted first as the next step in the advance of the Human Being.

As the Cinema Recording Apparatus now is coming forward, the ATTENTION of the individual is withdrawn from being wholly connected with exterior conditions, and as it

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

appears to cast off the lethargy of the past, and awakens to interior conditions, it notes the pictures presented through the efforts of the Senses.

It REFLECTS, and by COMPARISON, through REASON, forms new pictures, and the foundation for intellectual ability is established.

The highest plane to which a Human Being can rise in Understanding is, TO REALIZE HIS OWN RESPONSIBILITY OVER AND CONCERNING HIMSELF, under revealed Laws, the which he COMPREHENDS and UNDERSTANDS, so the Mental Faculties are appended with Responsibility as the governing Faculty, and at the same time being the Source of the Moral powers.

Responsibility.

Thought.	Understanding
Reason.	Judgment.
Comprehension.	Conscientiousness.

While the Moral Powers ending in Truth as the highest, might be written as follows:—

Truth.

Perfection.	Mercy.
Obedience.	Justice.
Love.	Faith.

While the names of the Attributes, Elements, Faculties and Powers as written, may or may not be the proper ones best fitted for the places, yet the number 7 must prevail throughout.

As God is perfect in 7, so all His Law and Work is perfect in 7; so Man, a complete and perfect physical being must be 7, and as a perfected being through his own will power, when he leaves this existence, must be mentally 7, and morally 7.

The higher Instinctive power of the Animal Kingdom rules, and controls all else below it, and is spontaneously obeyed by each and every animal; while the higher moral and mental powers, are supposed to rule in Man, but Man has the will power to debase, or to allow to become degraded these higher faculties, allowing the lower or animal passions, or physical systems to control and rule these higher powers.

It is possible that, after years of ridicule and contempt of the higher, more serious and all-important Divine and Natural Laws, the Human Mind may become weak, and finally incapable of comprehending and reasoning in connection with these most important and profound subjects.

It is strikingly evident, from the facts at hand, that a Human Being must become as willingly, perfectly obedient to a divine Law that he knows, as the Animal is spontaneously obedient to Instinct that he does not know.

Impressions or Pictures made upon the Brain by Superior external powers during sleep, will be considered later under Dreams.

The attention is now directed to the Gland Group in the Human body, a most wonderful creation, and a subject with which science is struggling to get definite limits; it is well known that some of these are actuated to function through Emotion, but whether all of the Group, known or unknown, are subject to the Passions, remains to be discovered; those Glands intimately connected with this subject, and now introduced are the Adrenals; subject to Passion, and especially to the Element Anger, and whose function it is to direct and control the distribution of Carbohydrates, stored with the Liver, to such places in the body as need it, and call for it through the brain; in a case of violent anger, and in the preparation of the

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

body for an expected combat, the upper part of the body would be the place issuing the call for renewed vigor and reenforcement in the blood, particularly the breast, shoulders and arms.

Should the anger be excessively violent, and hatred, jealousy, lust and beastial ferocity be the reasons of a terrific combat to the death, between Human beings, as was the case between Cain and Abel; there is no doubt but that, such a transaction, the first occurring, foreseen and foreknown by Nature, was provided for by Nature in a way to be used as a Symbol of warning to man in the future, by first preparing an excess supply of sugar, and holding it in readiness, and then at the precise time, allowing the Adrenals to open the way by which this was distributed principally to the most necessary parts of the body, and being in such excess, was forced to the surface, and coming in contact with the light, this Carbon became an excess of color pigment as it neared the surface, establishing forever a new branch in the human family.

What often appears to Man as the miraculous, is but the rearranging in some definite manner, of natural conditions, previously foreseen and foreknown and prepared by God through Nature, and the contrast as it suddenly appears, appeals to us as mysterious.

It is not miraculous or mysterious that TWO children are born of one mother, at the same time, as twins, although it is out of the ordinary; and these may be both male or both female, or one of each sex; and there are many other births of two, wherein each is wholly or only partially complete, but are joined together thus showing an abnormal condition of a not unknown occurrence.

These conditions neither run parallel nor counter to the subject that is to follow, but are merely brought forward here to show the distinction between the abnormal and extraordinary

THE HUMAN BODY

conditions, and the seemingly similar but marvelous conditions previously prearranged by Nature, and yet the two lines appear almost to run parallel.

And thus we approach the incidents connected with the two greatest transactions on this Earth, that Man has ever known; in the first, Adam a human being, a DUAL appears, and is equally complete in each, as far as it was possible to be so, and absolutely inseparable except by God; these united, existed as one being, and at the predetermined and exact time were separated, as they had been previously united, by Nature, and WOMAN was born.

In the second transaction, the birth of the Savior of the world, a phenomenal condition appears wherein a WOMAN, not a dual being, is chosen by God through Nature, having been previously equipped, preparatory to fulfill predetermined conditions, to appear at some future predetermined time.

That Passion Desire, in each case brought like results is not to be doubted, that the details of the birth methods in the two cases differ, is of no consequence, for within the woman already dwelt the latent living principle of a male human being, to be released at a signal from God, and through the efforts of a love and a desire of a human being, that was awful in its agony, as it wrestled with God, that He would redeem His promise to come and save a lost world.

CHAPTER II

Dreams and Visions

This subject now at hand, is one of the most peculiar interest, as it was by or through this mental qualification that Man appeared on the Earth, and this privileged condition has been with Man up to the present, and will continue to be with him until he leaves this existence for a higher life.

True visions and dreams are the same, and they may appear during waking or sleeping conditions, but the physical senses must be in a quiescent state, while the brain receives the record.

All human beings are subject to them, race, religion, evil or good, it matters not, all have the same privilege, although the one nearest to God, gets to know and understand much better the plans of God through the better picture scenes which he receives.

No human being has ever yet, nor ever will see God through the sense of sight, nor has ever talked with Him as human beings converse with each other.

All intercourse between God and Man is carried on by means of messages through mental pictures, constructed of God, or by Man.

On Dreams, as the foundation, rests all Divine Law, all prophecy and all knowledge and revelation of God to Man, so that each and every human being interested in the only and all-important Law of God, should take the most profound interest in this subject.

When the animal-man became sufficiently able to realize and reflect, then Nature gave him something better to think

about, than to think wholly of himself; she began to draw pictures for him, and so introduced him to his Creator, in Symbol; and so little by little, and step by step as he grew mentally stronger, and had better pictures of his own, then Nature introduced more complex scenes, and began putting them in Symbol form; this was for the same reason, as that when we were young, we were provided with test and trial propositions of various kinds, very easy at first, but growing more complex and harder to interpret as we grew older, because it is well known that with proper exercise, the different parts of the body are kept healthy and vigorous. Exercise is work, whether mental or physical, and work and life are synonymous in Nature.

Later on it will be more plainly shown that dreams, symbols, parables and prophetic predictions in parable or symbolic form, are all means to the same end, namely, to compel Man to think.

It is a self evident fact that, to produce a human being with complete and perfect thinking and reasoning capacity, and capabilities, was Nature's purpose from the beginning, and then to try to induce this being to think and reason along right and lawful lines, for it was intended that the Earth should return to the Creator a being who would and could work for Him, obeying Him whether in this existence or in some other.

Connected with dreams, there is a similar condition, erroneously called dreams, but in reality should be called hallucinations, and will be classed as such here, these being produced by the disordered conditions of the body itself, or by the outward environment, in either case acting on the senses, and producing disturbed sleep.

Extreme, foreign, or auto suggestion, during waking hours, over-wrought passions, hunger, thirst, great fatigue, disease, noises, odors, flavors, hurts, each and all of these with perhaps many others, play a part in producing disturbed sleep, and oft-

times to help in building up weird, grotesque, and often painful pictures, though they are not always thus, as some of the scenes may be pleasant and agreeable.

It is oftentimes exceedingly difficult to discern the difference between a dream, and hallucinations, and at times seemingly impossible, while on the other hand, if the health, and environment are taken into account, together with the mental condition, desires, and the general outline of the scenes presented during a supposed sleep, it is quite often in this way that one may be located as a dream, and especially if an interpretation is applied to it along right lines, for it is so seldom that a dream scene is pictured except in symbol, that it would be an exception if it occurred, and it is the learning of the method of interpreting these symbols that causes profound thought in many cases.

A human being may by the excessive use of alcohol, narcotics or other hurtful substances, so kill the faculty of the brain, that the power to receive such true messages may be lost.

But let a person of normal condition, go to sleep naturally, and sink into a profound slumber, and the body become dead as it were in peaceful rest, and it will occur to this person on waking, that he has had a dream, especially if he has been given to taking notice of them, and he will on examination note that there are things peculiar about them, that appear very mysterious, while the scenes are as a rule very natural; there are varieties of these dreams too numerous to mention, but they come from God through His trusted messengers, angels or workmen; these pictures are caused by the vibrant-aether-wave-sensation-impressions, on the brain centres, by this outside influence, or law working through beings who are acquainted with all physical conditions, and who are trying to guide us; these are undoubtedly beings who have in the unknown past become perfected under conditions similar to those of our own times, and who know us

thoroughly; and these are working for one end only, to direct Man to God.

Another peculiar condition now presents itself to us, we will group the incidents of the first 2000 years of Man on the Earth, including the historical narrative of the creation, the story of Adam and Eve, and Cain and Abel, the succeeding generations to and including Enoch, and the account of Noah and his family, and the flood, and the record of descent to Abraham.

Our record of this 2000 years is extremely limited, and this record that we have must have been formerly written by bits in many different ways, by different methods, and by different people, and some or all of these must have been preserved; when centuries later these were unearthed, and men found them who were very much interested. Portions of some may have been deciphered, while others would have been absolutely unintelligible, but these strong men of God, not having scholastic education, or the facilities of the 20th century for discovering the meaning of the mysterious writings, did the best they could, and then took their troubles to God, and what had been a mystery, was then made plain; this will appeal to us as we read Isaiah and Daniel.

With Abraham who wrote some incidental history, and was followed by his successors in doing the same, the time had arrived when God could and did make the task of interpreting dreams harder by using symbols, so as to make these men work and think harder, not only that they might be better mentally, but so that they might demonstrate to themselves, what they really were through conscientious thought and reasoning.

As Moses appears, it is plainly seen that Nature has made progress enough with Man in 2500 years, so that now as she has one whose mental capacity and ability are all that she requires,

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

she proceeds to make use of the incidents and conditions connected with this man, to teach him the way along a road that would eventually lead to God; there was no coercion, the spirit of God within the man was simply given the opportunity, and the mental food necessary was supplied by dreams and visions, and these with the natural intelligence prepared a man whom God could trust, to take the great responsibility of receiving the Word of God direct from Him, and imparting it to the people.

Doubtless there was more or less symbolism connected with the dreams in the earlier teaching until it was evident that there was no further need of it, when the dreams and visions were presented in a natural manner, and exactly in the scenes as were required to be known, for there was much about the delivery of the Law where no symbolism could be used, and so a man for this position had to be an exceptionally trustworthy man, of high intelligence, and absolute devotion.

The inherent possibilities within Man to know and understand God had now been demonstrated, and so now instead of the spirit of God appearing in power in a single individual successively following another, many, during the next 500 years appear, often contemporaneously, living with and knowing God, and getting additional light and help as they applied the Law, and at the same time received revelations concerning the future events connected with the Nation out of which was to come the great Deliverer.

The great ceremonial Law of the Temple, the sacrifices, the furniture, were all symbolic parts, in parable, daily set before the people to teach them what was extremely essential that they should know, and now we know how all this great system of teaching, through the various lines, both within and without, and by the senses, converged and culminated in the production of the

ONE PERFECT MAN 2000 years before the time limit of the rest of mankind.

The remarkable earnestness of devotion with which these prophets of God applied themselves to the fulfilling of this law founded on dreams, is amazing to us. They thoroughly and absolutely believed in it as God's word, and nothing could swerve them from their purpose, for as we know, some of these prophecies, now so priceless to us, a few of which yet remain to be fulfilled, were received from God and delivered to man at times, and under conditions, that would have made the stoutest heart quail, but there was no faltering.

Some of the prophets translated the symbolic scenes presented to them, others did not or only partially so, and the vision was recorded as seen, to be translated by others, if they wished to know the meaning; often dreams and visions were recorded as actual experience in the prophet's life, and not as dreams, and this too was left for the future to unravel.

Taking the incidents in the lives of those people so intimately connected with the birth of Jesus, and it is at once seen how deeply embedded in the human being was the absolute trust and belief in dreams, and we marvel at the pure simple sincerity of Mary, Elisabeth, Zacharias, and John the Baptist.

Jesus was far from being a highly educated person according to the 20th century standard, and yet He reached a place beyond which Man cannot go, and very few attain; it requires great effort on our part, in these days of high and broad education, to understand how such an indomitable will-power to obey, and an absolute unselfish devotion, even to self sacrifice, could so completely fill a person, whose real knowledge was founded on teachings, which were based on dreams, and on the dreams of his own.

From the time of Christ, until we open the Book of Revela-

tion, written some time after the crucifixion, we hear but little concerning dreams.

In the Book of Revelation, we reach the end of that long period beginning with Adam, and ending with the last man on the Earth or 7000 years; the first 2000 being principally devoted to teaching man through dreams; the second 2000 through dreams, visions, symbols, types, and ceremonial ritual; the third 2000 through acquired and self sufficient mental capacity and ability; while the last 1000 years is to be wholly devoted to the worshipping of Man and his works, by himself, and absolutely ignoring God; and in this Book of Revelation, or record, written in dream-vision-symbol-form, is found all that Man should know until the end of time.

John wrote as he was told; he did not know the interpretation of the whole nor did he try to interpret it; and since this time until now, ignorance, ingenuity, superstition, and education have tried to unravel its meaning and failed; it has been used, and its mysteriousness offered as an aid to forward all shades of religious beliefs, political opinions, and selfish personal theories.

It seems strange that a record as important as this is, should not have been fully interpreted long before this time.

Dreams and visions, however, did not stop here, they still continued, and are with us today, but those of today concern the individual to whom they are presented, and do not deal with the plans of God in general, as in the past, and each vision that an individual has, he knows that it is for himself alone, and for no other; personal experiences of this will be appended.

During the past twenty years, the great strides made in the scientific studies of the brain, and the nervous system, together with the high development of the popular Moving Picture System, has demonstrated to Man more perfectly than has ever been

DREAMS AND VISIONS

done before, the wonderfully built structure, the human brain, in that it is able to receive and record such messages, in scenes and pictures, as have been, and are continually being sent from the Infinite source.

CHAPTER III

Symbols and Types

It is understood by what has already been said that there is no other way possible for a human being to think than by means of the cinema process, and this appears to be the scientific theory.

As dreams are not now being considered, but the symbols as they appear in the true dreams, these only will be considered, together with symbols, types and ceremonial acts, with which Man forms his own pictures through the senses; but, with the exception of symbols and types, all other subjects will be considered elsewhere.

It has already been noted that symbols in true dream pictures are what parables are in language, and for the same reason.

And in this, symbolism, either in dreams or visions, in physical types of men or animals, or in symbolic numbers, as used by and coming from God, is always absolutely correct, and this is made evident when the true meaning is correctly understood.

As these, in the Bible record, have suffered the least through interpolation, mistranslation, or otherwise, there are but few errors, and these are quickly noticed; the basic reason being known, these errors may easily be corrected.

Since the beginning of the Christian Era, the use for a knowledge of biblical symbols and types seems to have gradually disappeared, until in these latter days Man pays but little attention to these, for in most cases they are considered of but little

account now, and by scholars as a rule are relegated into the past, as being of such simple nature as to be worthless to us at this period, and but little dreaming of the mine of immense wealth hidden therein; so that, despite the evil intentions of Man, if he had any, to misconstrue the words of God, in writing, teaching, or in translation, this has all been overcome through the foreknowledge of God, by placing the fundamental elements of Himself and His Law, His Purposes and Wishes in these symbols, which Man has for the most part left alone.

Referring to dream pictures, a picture drawn by a superior power, may take only an instant or it may occupy a longer time, but during this time all outward conditions must be shut out from the individual, and the physical body be quiescent, with only the brain centres open to receive the alternating-vibrant-ether-wave-message-picture, from anywhere, either far or near, in fact, in the ethereal world there are no distance limits, and it goes without saying that there are superior powers who may, can and do present these pictures to Man, knowing his condition much better than he himself, for his best and especial good; the pictures presented to Man from this source are nearly always in symbol, there are but few exceptions, and these were absolutely necessary.

The record shows that Adam received most of his pictures in natural picture-scenes, together with others having symbolism, in his dreams and visions, but there is no record of other symbols beside these; while later in Noah's time, the symbols begin to appear, not only in dreams, but outwardly to appeal to the senses as the rainbow is made the symbol of God, or His Name in the Earth, although if the pictures of the Creation, as given in the narrative, were presented to Enoch, it would show that symbolism had already been established with him.

These pictures of Creation, whenever they occurred, it may have been with Enoch, are the first that are presented to us, and stand as symbols of very important things.

The 6-day periods, or work week of God in Creation, stand as symbols of the 6-days period, or calendar work week of Man ; and the 7th day of rest in Creation, is the symbol of the 7th day of rest with Man, The Sabbath ; while this day with Man stands as the symbol of the period of rest, during the 7th day of Man's period, when accepted Man will be with his God.

The Seven Days time in Creation is the symbol of the Creation and Development Day-Period of Man, or Man's Period, or the whole time of Man here on the Earth ; and this too is divided into 7 parts, as will be understood later on ; both of these symbolic conditions, teaching that all Creation, for all time, is directly referable to God, and under His jurisdiction, for the symbol of God himself is 7.

As the symbolic picture is to the true picture, so a type is to that which it represents.

The burning animal as it is left to its condition, while the brothers of Cain and Abel fought in deadly hatred for it, and afterwards used as a symbol of the ratification of peace and good will by Man, was accepted by God, through Man, when the first real sacrifice was offered to God, at His behest, as the symbol of peace between God and Man, and became the symbol, typical of the Great Sacrifice for Peace ; while the method of offering this symbolic emblem, was to become the great ceremonial ritual of the future, likewise typical.

When the method of teaching Man by means of symbols and types was first understood by Man, is not known ; and whether during the old dispensation, anyone ever fully comprehended all that these symbols and types meant, is doubtful, as the mean-

SYMBOLS AND TYPES

ing of many of these today is generally unknown, or ignored as worthless mysteries of the past.

With Abraham the symbol and type system became very much enlarged.

Man's superior correspondents (God if you will) or Angels, use as a rule, in dealing with Man, and in drawing dream or vision pictures for his benefit, things, objects and conditions, with which Man is familiar, nearly related to, or something regarded by him with favor or otherwise.

In some way Abraham became familiar with the stars, and these were used as symbols of many things of importance.

As it was known that Abraham was acquainted with the different clusters of star bodies, and that he noticed more particularly those directly above him, and that he knew that each of these clusters or constellations appeared at regular intervals, at known times, directly in the same place; and that any one of these constellations would pass and return after a certain length of time, to exactly the same place above him; this last feature establishing the year limit, while the appearing of the seasons, bore a relationship to the appearance of some of the constellations, and the time of sowing and reaping, and the seasons of the bearing of flocks and herds were also seen to be connected with the appearance of certain constellations; all of this was brought to his notice in dream pictures, and the number of constellations made 12, thus dividing the year limit, as well as dividing the period of time of the rotation of the Earth on its axis into 12 parts, thus dividing the day and night as one, into 12 parts; while each of the symbolic star constellations became the symbolic-picture-scenes of the most important, and tremendous transactions concerning Man included in God's plan; and at the same time Abraham was made a symbolic type of God in the Earth, and his son Isaac became the type of the Great Sacrifice.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

It is plainly seen that Jacob was made a type of the Whole Law of God to Man.

As it is extremely necessary that these types in symbol be fully understood at the beginning, we will review.

Abraham typified GOD, in bringing to Man a knowledge of the relationship between him and God, and in bringing forth from himself a type of the Great Deliverer, The Sacrifice, The Perfect Man, The First Born of many who would before the end of time follow and become one with Him; as this was the real reason of God's creating the Earth, so, Isaac typified the perfect man, or, THE WORK OF GOD.

The next, Jacob typifies the WHOLE LAW OF GOD, these THREE divisions constitute all that Man knows of God, and is so understood and symbolized by Him, by the number 3.

Jacob's 12 sons were types of the 12 parts of the whole law of God, to man, and these were of 4 mothers typifying the four periods of time, into which the Creation Day Period of Man was divided, as will be understood later on; the mothers also typifying that the law was originated of and for Man, and would be over him all of his allotted time here.

Only the SONS of Jacob are made use of, because the symbols must necessarily typify the living principle of the law.

Joseph typifies the Christ, who by His death brings the two great and essential elements to Man, namely, BREAD and WATER, the symbols of LIFE and TRUTH, typified by Joseph's sons Ephraim and Manasseh, who take Joseph's place and Levi's, as Levi typified the substitution under the law, for sin, or the cost price, that was to be paid to redeem Man from sin.

And this again is typified in the deliverance of the Hebrews, from slavery in Egypt, the type and symbol of darkness, evil and superstition; and yet out of this darkness and sin, typifying the world in general, appears the Christ in Joseph, who before

SYMBOLS AND TYPES

his death demonstrates his ability to save, (note the wheat, or bread) not only his own people, (God's) but any and all (Egypt) who will come to him.

Too, out of this same darkness and sin, appears one, born of the truth, Moses, who typifies 10 parts of the Law only, or the Law without Life; Moses could deliver his people from slavery, but he could not bring them into Canaan, a deliverer typifying the whole law must do this.

The 42 years wandering in the wilderness, typifies a period of time in which Man was to be under the direct instruction of the law, while, as Moses stands as a type of the 10 parts of the law, or law without life, for this reason he could not supply bread and water to the people in the wilderness, but God did through him; emblematical of the life coming from the law through obedience, and so Moses could not take the people into Canaan; a type of the higher life for Perfected Man, but Joshua the type of the Perfect Man Jesus, led the people in.

The 42 years in the wilderness typifies the time from the dedication of the Temple to the coming of Jesus, this is 1000 years, or the symbolical week day, and this is an established symbol, arrived at in this way.

Everything, throughout all creation, originates with God and His Law, hence these are the only two conditions upon which everything rests in existence; God 7 is perfection; His Whole Law 12, incomplete 10, perfection 7; Man, His Work, imperfect 6, perfect 7.

The whole time of Man's duration here is 7000 years, this is divided into 4 parts; 3 parts of 2000 years each, and one part of 1000 years.

Each of the three parts is under; first, God and His direct teaching by dreams etc; second, the Law 10 and its authority with Man; the third, is under the Spirit of God in Man, or the

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

Whole Spirit 12; and the fourth, is under Man as his own god and guide, and left alone by God, to do as he wishes, for although he is still under God's law and jurisdiction, yet he absolutely ignores it, and refuses to obey Him during this whole time or day.

7 and 12 both represent time and perfection, 10 time and incompleteness, 6 time and imperfection.

To show that each symbolic week day is complete, as His work, by Himself, and under His Law, the 3rd power of 10 is used or 1000.

And as 7 and 12 are perfect, they may be used together as 84; this number to represent any one of the three 2000 year periods, while 42 represents any one of the 1000 year periods, and this may be given in days, or months, or times as symbols.

The Hebrew Tabernacle was the portable model of the Temple to be. The Temple was the symbol of the human being, who, at the appointed time, was to become the living Temple, if he would. This was why no workman's tools were allowed to be used in its erection. Its three divisions, the outer court, the holy place, and most holy place are symbols of the crude physical, mental, and moral divisions in Man.

The ceremonial ritual will not be considered here; suffice it to say, that he who is intent on accomplishing his true purpose here, is continually sacrificing of the earthly things, and is symbolized by the sacrificial ceremony in the outer court; at the same time he is looking to God in deep mental concern, and this is symbolized by the incense upon the altar; and, while thoroughly believing in God and His word, he uses all his mental ability in striving to know God, these conditions being symbolized by the bread, and the burning 7 branched lamp in the holy place; while the most holy place is the symbol of the soul of Man, it is in this place that Man meets his God, if he has the whole Law of God written within; this is demonstrated by the Breast

SYMBOLS AND TYPES

plate of the High Priest, and the Urim and Thummim, and no one, but he who wore these could enter and meet with God; in passing we note the significance of this, as Moses himself could not enter this place, once it was established]

The breast plate with its 12 divisions stands emblematical of the whole Law of God within, while the stones called Urim and Thummim, symbolize the complete and absolute self subjection of the individual will to God and His will, thereby being filled with LIGHT (light being the symbol of God), and thus appearing PERFECT before God.

A study of the daily life of Jesus, shows that this was fulfilled in Him, and this is expected of each and all who expect to be accepted by God.

With the exception of a very few instances, the symbols, types and ceremonial ritual details, converged and culminated in Jesus the Christ, closing the Old Dispensation.

As we move forward into the New Dispensation, we are attracted by that remarkable production written by the disciple John, the Apocalypse; and as it brings over from out of the past, the dreams and visions, symbols and types, together with new additions, it seems more fitting that this, in all of its completeness should be considered under Prophecy and Prediction.

CHAPTER IV.

Thought Transmission and Will Power

Thought Transmission, and Will Power, are not synonymous, but may be considered together in this subject, because of their close relationship, and the great power that one may have over the other.

The most ordinary form of thought transmission, is by means of the human language, and as this is so well known, it is not under special consideration, but a more direct way is introduced.

Thought transmission, by means of concentrated thought, is better understood, and not as much of a mystery as it was 30 years ago, yet there still remains many points to be thoroughly understood.

That one person, by a supreme effort of the will, can concentrate the thinking, reasoning powers on a subject, and project such thoughts to a distance, and influence another, in many cases against the will of the other, is amazing.

It is as though any thought picture, conceived by a person, and impressed upon the brain film, through the expenditure of a terrific amount of concentrative thought energy, would also, by reason of magnetic waves, be projected forth from the originator, to be received by one or many, or, no one in particular, depending upon the intention of the sender, and with these persons, making the same impressions as in the originator.

Nature, a living source of mental or thought pictures, is constantly and continually, without ceasing, projecting these forth, throughout all of the environment of Man, if not all of the

universe, to be received by nervous central stations in the animal world, compelling each and every animal to do as it is commanded ; as these cannot do otherwise they receive the impulses, but do not realize it, this is instinct ; the same law holds good with Man, and is effective in the infant, until it becomes able to reason, and then by reason of its own inherent ability, and aided by the experience of others, it becomes self-guided, and responsible ; thus, Nature is not arbitrary with man, she warns, and advises, but does not compel, and it is against Nature's law, that one human being use its will power to compel another against its will, in matters of mental control.

Unlawful acts of this description, purporting to be the intermediary whereby messages of warning, advice, command or nonsense, were sent to or received from the dead, during the early history of Man, was punishable under the Law of God, by death without mercy.

There is some evidence to show that it is possible for living human beings, to approach the souls of others, who having departed the former life here, are existing for the time being, in a state of transition ; but this evidence is meagre, and the necessary details lacking, but beside this, the fact together with the evidence, such as it is, are worthless, because nothing is learned or taught, that is not already better known through other channels.

Living beings of the ethereal world, may and do, converse with Man, and Man with them, but with none else to any value ; the human being of this earth will hold and preserve his thought-picture-record process, until he is forever through here, and then the record is either retained or destroyed with himself.

The soul of Man is the vital-germ-engraved-receptacle, while the spirit is the mental-thought-picture-impression upon or within this germ ; if the engraving is whole, and perfect according to

divine law, this soul germ lives on with the spirit-picture-engraving-record of the individual upon and within it, but if the engraving is imperfect, and unlawful, the record is destroyed, and the infinite-spark-soul then reverts to the Creator.

Thought transfer, and will power, used judiciously, by man, are powerful instruments for the right; a person's physical acts, and conversation, do not alone influence others; the profound-concentrated-thought-energy-picture, of whatever description, projected forth, is more often than many realize, the real reason of many individual lives being what they are, but this is more because of the passive conditions of many minds, or because such are often easily led, by reason of their thinking along parallel lines, with the thought transference, which may be for good or evil.

One very serious matter with the human family of the 20th century, is, generally speaking, that the people do not think deeply regarding the truth, they think and reason shallowly; the truth, as a religion, is reckoned as one of many others, of whatever source, consequently little or no more thought is expended on the truth, than on any other type of semi-civilized, barbarous, or idolatrous religion; this lack of profound thought, not only impairs the understanding, but will finally destroy the capacity and ability to effectually concentrate the mind on anything worth while, and children born of such parents, are more mentally deformed, than the fathers and mothers, tending to down-grade, and total depravity; connected with this condition, is frivolousness, that jeers, jibes and turns everything of seriousness and worth into ridicule, until it becomes almost impossible to find an individual who will listen to the truth, and retain anything of importance.

It was the intention of Nature, that the whole structure of Man should be obedient to the higher moral powers within,

and that these powers should listen to the instruction, warning, and advice from God, through His different systems of thought transfer; failing to do this, Man slowly but surely becomes a worthless object, and finally dies, having existed only as an animal.

Thought transmission, has been considered more than will power thus far, so now, this latter subject claims the attention more definitely; will power granted to the human being, is his best, most important, and dependable possession, for with it, he determines his own destiny.

He may reason, and know, and act in conjunction with God, through Nature, and Nature's laws, or he may refuse to acknowledge any allegiance to God, or any recognition of His laws, and still exist here on the earth, using all of the benefits of God prepared for Man, and at the same time, hate and defy Him, and set himself up as his own ideal, to be worshipped; of course there is an end to all this, and the end is here and will appear at the appointed time.

Any human being, on the earth today, who says he does not, and cannot know fully of God, and His Law, and the relationship existing between man and God, with all of the opportunities that there are at hand, is deceiving himself with a falsehood, and any others who are silly enough to listen to him; also, he is not an honest man, for, as he is dishonest with his Creator, so he is always untrustworthy in any capacity amongst his fellows.

God shows no partiality; to every living individual human being is granted the power of will, to determine his own destiny, and for the use of this power, he must be held accountable; also, any one other person who attempts to thwart God's plan, and to frustrate His purposes by endeavoring to obtain control of another's will, for any purpose, and so subjecting another,

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

stands in a most reprehensible position before God, and Nature.

Each and every individual is held responsible for the right use, or abuse of his will power and one is held as being as guilty, as the other if one allows his will power to become subject to another, as though one actually directed it in an unlawful way.

CHAPTER V. Parables and Mental Growth

Almost enough has already been said, to cover this subject, but as it is of such great importance, and occupies such a prominent place in matters human, some of its essential points will be considered.

That Mental Growth, to a greater or less degree, depending on the individual, is necessary to the production of a normal mind in man, is accepted without question; and that healthy and proper mental exercise is necessary to mental growth, is also conceded.

Parables, taken as a whole, of whatever nature, stand as a proposition amongst many others, whose function it is to cause the mind of man to work; parables, introducing serious consideration of lines of thought, embracing such subjects as pertain to the truth, in Nature, concerning God, His Law, or the development of Christian principles, as established by Jesus the Christ, tend to the healthy exercise of the mind in the right manner; this does not mean that the mind that is exercised, in connection with parables, concerning the truth, is a truthful mind, the mind may be warped, twisted and perverted by the will of the thinker, although the line of thought may be right.

Man is not the only being, using this method, of placing of propositions or problems before his kind, for the purpose of brain exercise, and development; the whole animal kingdom is replete with the efforts of the experienced, to teach the inexperienced, by means of this usually playful exercise, imaginary

in character, but paralleling the actual conditions as far as possible, and always tending in the right direction.

The real reason why this subject is introduced, is to bring forward the fact, that Jesus used Parables, generally ; in teaching, and the real points to be considered, are, why He used them at all, and for what.

It is undoubtedly a fact, that it was not only necessary, but the wisest and best possible thing to do, and that He had superior advice to that effect.

A matured mental capacity, filled with useless memory impressions, is simply a garret filled with a century's collection of rubbish.

It would be impossible that a human brain be filled only with the most useful impressions, there will always be some useless, ornamental, frivolous, silly or criminal impressions, and these impressions may not be erased, once the record is made.

It is within the power of man to remedy the otherwise uselessness of the brain, by trying not to store away heterogeneous masses of rubbish in the garret, but to try to build a useful picture impression.

Jesus spoke sharply, and pointedly, always to one end ; He brought to men's notice the fact, that man should be thinking about the only things worth taking into consideration, and then pointed out the things ; but He used symbols in parables, so that man might work the harder to discover the hidden gem.

Only a few of His time, thought it worth while to try to discover the truth hidden in His parables, and even in the 20th century but very few indeed try to discover all that is meant, as it is hidden away in the revealed word as we have it today ; but those who have searched and found these gems, have felt fully rewarded, for their efforts.

CHAPTER VI.

Prophecy and Prediction

This is the last of the subjects to be considered; not that it is of the greatest importance, but because it will take us to the end of one line, where man, if he wishes to go farther, having already prepared himself, he then steps into a new existence.

What has already been said, is again reiterated here, this subject, like the others considered previously, is so interlocked with these others, as to be inseparable.

It is to be understood that this subject is considered as dealing with God and His Law, and relative propositions only; the two terms are offered to be considered together and at the same time, not that they are synonymous, nor that prediction is in any way used as a term to denote an imaginary, magical or foolishly mysterious foretelling of future events to take place; prophecy is used to denote that which is preached, or taught by man, as directly of or from God, in warning, advice or command, either by means of types, symbols, ceremonies, parables or otherwise, either relating to the immediate present or to the future; and prediction is used to strengthen this term, as this invests the prophet with full authority, to as faithfully and truthfully foretell of future coming events, as of teaching of present conditions;

Prophecy practically begins with Noah in his preaching, with a little prediction added to it after the flood, which became more noticeable with Abraham, according to the historic narra-

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

tive, and from this time forward, these two are inseparably bound together.

All that it was necessary for a man to know at the time, was provided for Moses that he might faithfully fulfill his mission for that generation, and also bestow on the people all that they could understand concerning the future.

Absolute faith in God, through dream pictures and vision scenes, substantiated by symbols and types, and demonstrated by means of ceremony and parable, then finds a firm foundation in man and his perfect trust and belief are swayed by no thing or condition, not that the prophets of God simply thought this of themselves that they were perfect, or that their contemporaries thought it of them, but from the viewpoint of the 20th century A. D. it is seen that God knew and recognized it.

Biblical history with its prophetical narrations is at hand, so it is not necessary to consider the methods or peculiarities, or the different lines of work, or the different prophetic utterances assigned to the different ones of each of these godly men, although it is interesting to note a few points or rather predictions that have as yet not been fulfilled; while the others intimate this. Ezekiel and Daniel predict more boldly the actual occurrences which are yet to appear, but yet in a dim hazy manner, showing that they did not grasp the full meaning themselves.

It was shown to Ezekiel that at some future set time, the Temple would exist only in Man as an individual; and the stone, or artificial structure, as a symbol or type would be done away with; also, that the whole time of Man's duration here, was limited to four periods; beyond this he was not able to grasp; too, Daniel was definitely informed concerning the destruction of the Hebrew Temple, the reason, and the signs attending it; and also that this would stand as the symbol of the destruction in later times, of the desolated and desecrated preintended

individual temple, and the time of the end of this condition; but even he was too mystified to completely understand it.

It is well known how, with but few exceptions, all of these prophecies were misunderstood, disbelieved, ignored and detested at the beginning of the Christian Era, when the Savior was born; the old world darkness of selfish superstition, wretchedness and evil, was settling down upon Man with not a ray of light to guide him out of the terrors of this horrible night.

All of the prophetic spirit of God, down His ancestral line, converged and culminated in the seed of this one Man Jesus. He was completely human, with all of the power of the Spirit of God within Him, that the previous years could acquire and place there; He did not know this through any previous memory or by experience, He only obeyed the law within Him, and allowed it to guide Him; He was the real Temple built without hands; and this is where the Gospel, or God's Speech, appears in full for the first time, as the WHOLE SPIRIT OF GOD shines forth, in word, act and deed from this Son of Man.

Jesus was not educated by the 20th century standard, but He knew that there was only one thing for the first human being who thoroughly and absolutely believed, trusted and obeyed God, completely and fully to live and die for, and that was to do the will of God; He lived so close to the line separating Man and God, that when he reached a place beyond which He could not go without a better knowledge, He applied to God and received all that was necessary.

The first and only human being thus far, sustained by a belief, faith and trust in God that carried Him through to the end, when the Earth had no place for Him, the grave could not hold Him, so He returned to God.

The Deliverer, the Revelation, the Example, Emmanuel, came and went, a beam of light had been shot through the

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

stygian darkness that was to spread as its rays found suitable objects to receive and reflect it.

But Man in general, as yet, was too dazed and self-centered to pay much attention to this; the methods of the Old Dispensation then slowly passed away, and the New methods of prophecy and teaching of the New Dispensation appeared and gathered headway as Man realized what this great transaction meant.

At the beginning of the new dispensation, a prophet steps forth out of obscurity, and lays completely bare the whole plan of God concerning Man from his beginning, until the end of his sojourn here, and this man was John.

As a prophet, teaching the principles of the Christ, John had labored long and hard, and the time was near at hand when this would cease, for at that time he was a prisoner and exile, and the duration of his life was problematical.

The Savior knew, as no one else, that the "beloved disciple" was the one to be trusted to place the great plan of God, in the hands of Man, that they might do with it as they should choose, so authority is given to John, and the picture scenes began, and he wrote just as he saw and heard, and did not try to interpret or translate anything, leaving it for those of the future, who should care enough to know, to discover the interpretation.

Symbols and types have been considered, but as symbols, types, prophecy and prediction are here intermingled, it is better to take them altogether and review them.

First, in order that what is made known, shall be seen and understood aright, John is found in a condition wherein the physical body is at rest, and only the brain centres alive to superior picture scenes and impressions, and the sharpness of outline, and vivid description, show that he was well and healthy, and had little or no bodily suffering, and that there was little

or no disconcerting environment; it is as though, if Nature did not arrange and interfere, and make these conditions, for her own benefit; then she, at least, foreseeing them, quickly made use of them when they appeared; whether these scenes appeared during the day or night, does not matter, and it is quite possible that the pictures were not shown consecutively, as we have them today, though it is probable that the Great Historic Plan was presented in continuous consecutive connection, though broken up in the different scenes, but even this does not matter, for they may be translated, although the arrangement as we have it is bad, and the transcription, and would-be translations, are particularly so.

John is given absolute authority, not so much for his benefit, as for those of the future who might ask for the proof of his genuineness.

The first thing brought to our attention, is that we are to understand we are now in the New Dispensation (note the term CHURCH in place of synagogue or temple), the Jewish Temple has passed away forever, and MAN is now the TEMPLE; created in the image of God, he has the seven powers' or attributes' capacity to fit up and make perfect, with which he is to present himself before God, and each of these must be perfect, and we are told in just what manner each attribute must be perfected.

It is perhaps the better way, to accept this Book as it is arranged, with but few exceptions, as this is less likely to cause any misunderstanding.

First, we note that in a vision, the risen Christ appears to the writer, and is by him fully understood to be eternally alive, through the victory over sin and death, and that He has absolute knowledge of all the details of the plan of God, concerning Man.

Rev. 1. 12. This is symbolical of an individual human being, and as there is no light or fire, so the man awaits in this condition. 13. The appearance of the Son of Man is the Whole Spirit of Truth, not only amongst men, but within each one. 14 and 15. symbolizes absolutely Infinity, the Origin of all Creation, absolute Truth without and within. 16. The 7 stars symbolize absolute power in the Earth; the double edged sword all of the authority of God, and His Law at His command, and the Sun symbolizes the Eternal Infinity, and Power of God. 20. the 7 churches represent an individual, the candlesticks the inner being of this individual, the 7 stars or lights symbolizes the complete power or LIFE with Christ, available for these otherwise nonburning candlesticks; these too symbolize the Angels or living beings, messengers, spirits, or workmen of God, now as servants of Christ, always near at hand to guide, warn, admonish, and council each and all who wish to know the way of truth and life.

Rev. 2. The Seven Churches in Asia, having been established and ministered to by John, he was naturally interested in them, and their welfare, and in their great responsibility, they had undertaken, and so during his imprisonment, he was advised as to what each of these organizations lacked, together with their standing and purpose, and this was made the basis of a symbolism in guiding the individual, though it is doubtful if John saw anything else but the direct word of command to the separate churches.

ver. 1. The term church was probably not used at this time, but introduced later, and the name for these separate organizations of one belief was most likely Christ Ones, in derision by outsiders, while they would have been likely to have styled themselves, Disciples of the Risen Jesus; in any case, whatever the appellation, a symbolic term is used to show

definitely the beginning of the new dispensation; this verse begins badly, as John is to write to each of the churches what the Spirit of Christ (the angel) dictates to him.

ver. 2-3. Each and every one of the seven lamps MUST be kept burning, if one goes out, the burning of the rest avails nothing; only the complete, full, and first-of-all-love of the individual will be accepted (note Jesus' teaching concerning the first and greatest commandment) the Risen Christ is at all times, in all places, through and by His associate messengers, in touch, to sympathize with, and aid each and every individual who is in any way trying to serve Him; but the individual is wholly responsible, and no curtailed or fractional service will be accepted, it MUST BE WHOLE; if not, and it is thoroughly understood, that the individual should know, and so if, under these conditions, selfishness still exists, then the individual will be removed; for a knowingly willfully disobedient human being is of no worth to God, and is not of as much importance or consequence to Nature as any one specimen of the dumb animal kingdom, because he will not fulfill what he was created for; the words "remember," "fallen," and "repent" show that it is fully known by Christ that Man can and may know all that is necessary, if he will; "to eat of the tree of life" is to live with God and have intercourse with Him, "the paradise of God" is the rest place of existence with God, and it is within the power of Christ to bestow these.

ver. 8-12. Christ is watching, and knowing, without interfering.

Man's love for Him must be full and such that no cruelty, hypocrisy or distress can alter it, for as He has passed through it all, and still knows about it, this should be sufficient to strengthen the follower; the crown signifies royal birth; the second death, the verdict or judgment imposed on the disobedient in the end.

ver. 12-13. As in the teachings of Jesus, "he that hath ears to hear let him hear" and is again used here, is equivalent to "what one desires to hear, one can hear."

The festering contagious sores in the church here, symbolize the same condition ALLOWED in the individual, by himself, hence he is responsible for his own individual death in the end and in evidence of this, Christ will use the revelation of God, in Himself, and His Laws as a witness against him; it is very noticeable that it is one continual fight without any cessation, by the human being, if he wishes to succeed in getting to God, but if he does succeed, direct and uninterrupted intercourse with God will be a reality, because he will be reckoned as one with God, and this is further symbolized in the hidden manna, or bread, (life), the hidden manna really symbolizing the word, will, or demands of God in symbol, or as generally imparted to Man, but this is done away with, when Man is one with Him; the "white stone" is the symbol of Truth, and the "new name" 777 as will appear later; it is intended to show that there must be no false, selfish, unlawful desires entertained which would destroy the other motives, not that true lawful physical desires should not be legally satisfied; each and all of the systems, elements, attributes and powers of the human body should be wisely employed as intended, as this makes the whole being; God does not want self-made cripples.

ver. 18-29. As in the previous warning, so again, the Spirit of Christ warns against the allowing of any teaching, of whatever nature, to influence or seduce one from the known straight road; as such who do turn away, will surely be destroyed; to "commit fornication" is to accept and follow other laws and authority, than the commands of God; an "adulterer" stands as the symbol of one who makes a pretense of obeying God, but is really a hypocrite; to "eat food sacrificed to idols" is

equivalent to accepting erroneous, foolish and selfish religious opinions and judgments of Man, while at the same time ignoring the known will of God; to "rule with a rod of iron" is to have all authority over all that is subject to God, and over those who are not coequal with Him.

Rev. 3. 1-7. In this word, the warning is given, that one must not build on any hope that he may have concerning the future, in thinking, hoping and trusting that all will be well in the end, while at the same time, life and opportunity are wasted in selfishness and in embracing the opinions, and foolish worldly desires of men; only he who fights and wins, will be accepted as coequal with Christ.

ver. 7-13. In this word to the church at Philadelphia, the same encouragement and sympathy are extended as in the word to the church at Smyrna, in both cases there is no fault found, and no especial warning is given, but advice and pity is extended, as only could be done by a superior power who knows all conditions at all times, and there is a recognition of true service, with the wondrous promise of eternal life with Christ in the end; it is shown very forcibly in this word, that it is possible for one or more powers or attributes in a person to be all right, and acceptable to God, while the rest may be selfishly controlled. The 12th verse shows conclusively that it is only **PERFECTION**, through the individual will; and perfection is truth; and truth is light; and light is eternal life, and the symbol of this is 7. 7. 7.

ver. 13-22. The sharp and decisive warning given, needs no explanation, because the meaning is very obvious, although especial attention is called to the 20th and 21st verses; as Jesus the Christ became equal with God, through obedience, **SO MUST EVERY ONE, WHO INHERITS ETERNAL LIFE**, there is no half way condition, one must be equal with God as recognized by Him, or he reverts to the original condition, in the end, as

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

though he had never been ; and thus the human being is advised, and warned, so that there may be no possible mistake, and then if there is any blame, it will be with the individual himself, as he bears the whole responsibility.

Rev. 4. and 5. These chapters will be taken together, as this forms one continuous picture ; the scene changes now, and we stand at the beginning of the Christian era, or after the ascension of Christ, and view the whole time of Man, from his advent to the end of time ; while the pictures presented, only bring us as far as the reception of Christ by God, and the delivering to Him the Plans of God, and all authority over Man.

ver. 1. and 2. The opening of the dream.

ver. 3. If this had been written right, it would have read, that the ONE, was represented by the most varied and beautiful LIGHT, for the rainbow is the symbol of His name, and the WHOLE LIGHT, unseparated, is the symbol of Himself, the varied colors when separated symbolizing His attributes.

ver. 4. The "24 elders" are symbolical of the Law of God in two divisions, of 12 parts each, as in both the old and new dispensations ; the number 12, the clothing, the crown, shows absolute perfection, royal authority, and power.

ver. 5. Is symbolical of the voice or power of God in creation, and complete in the Earth in His seven attributes.

ver. 6. The "sea of glass" symbolizes purity or truth in the earth, and also the human family, the "crystal" emphasizes the truth, if man is impure and untrue "this is not the fault of God, he was created pure and true ; the "4 beasts" symbolize 4 periods of time, beginning with man, and ending with him ; in Ezekiel we see how he was shown this nearly the same picture ; for his prophetic work, it was necessary that he should know the time of Man, and that it was contained in 4 periods, and so

PROPHECY AND PREDICTION

we note the “appearances of Men” and the “wheels” or cycles of time.

ver. 7. The “lion” stands for the first 2000 year period.

The “calf” stands for the second 2000 year period.

The “man” stands for the third 2000 year period.

The “eagle” stands for the fourth 1000 year period.

The “eyes” in the “beasts” signify knowledge, understanding, and wisdom; and the “wings” denote the flight of time, while 6 refers to earthly or finite, and not Infinite conditions.

ver. 8-11. This whole period of time, is the only one, that is able to knowingly and understandingly return the glory to God, for having been created; all other periods are dumb, it is not necessary that man does actually do this, the honor is the same, though man ignores his God, for he could with his knowledge, recognize Him if he would; so that, during the whole time of Man on the Earth, it is known by him that God is the supreme and Infinite creator, through His Law.

Rev. 5; 1. The “book” is the plan of God concerning Man, the “seals” the knowledge of this plan within Himself, and not as yet known,

ver. 2-5. Show the picture connections.

ver. 6. The victorious Christ, the Perfect Man; the 7 horns, and 7 eyes, are symbols of the Whole Power of God in the Earth, the horns stand as the symbols of beams of light, and the eyes as all knowledge, this is within this Man as the Living Spirit, and the Word or Revelation of God.

ver. 7. God bestows on this Man the right to know His plans.

ver. 8. And all the Laws of God for Man, and all the time of Man with his knowledge recognize the right of Christ to accept this honor; too, in verses 9 and 10 the perfected ones

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

who are to follow Jesus from the Earth, with one voice, acclaim Him the first Victorious Man.

ver. 11. Shows that others, similar to Perfected Man, having been perfected previously elsewhere, and now the servants of God and Christ, too, join in the acclamation; and, while they are perfect and in great numbers, yet they are not a complete number, as is shown by the multiple of 10, showing that they await others yet to come, who will be as themselves.

ver. 12 shows how fully these celestial beings, recognize the position and authority of Christ now, while verses 13 and 14 show conclusively that all Nature, and all time and law recognize both God and Christ as coequal throughout all eternity.

The next picture scene that opens up before us, is contained in the 6th., 7th., 8th., 9th. and the last part of the 11th., chapter, beginning at the 14th verse.

The details of the plans of God, known only to Himself, until the Christ was given full authority, are now to be made plain.

Rev. 6. There are 7 seals, symbols of the 7 periods of the time of Man, of 1000 years each, the knowledge of the details of which were hidden with God, till broken by Christ.

As we already know, the 4 beasts represent the 4 periods of the whole time of Man.

The "4 horses" are symbols of the great and only four powers, as recognized by God and Christ, as having authority in the Earth, and controlled by Man; as each of these "horses" appear with any one of the beasts, so each power is in authority during all time, and not simply during any one particular period, as might be inferred from the context; each and all of these powers extend over the entire time of Man, with varying authority of each one, at different times.

ver. 1. Christ begins the Revelation, with the voice and authority of God, by breaking the first seal, and thereby re-

PROPHECY AND PREDICTION

leasing the first thousand years, the time from Adam to Enoch.

ver. 2. The “white horse” is the symbol of the ABSOLUTE TRUTH, in the Earth; the rider, Man, has been given full regal authority, as the “crown” signifies, while the “bow” signifies the acceptance and acknowledgment of this power.

ver. 3. and 4. The second “seal” is broken, releasing the second thousand years, the time from Enoch to the call of Abraham.

The “red horse” is the symbol of ABSOLUTE EVIL in the Earth and is the antithesis of truth, in its active opposition to God.

The “power” and authority given to the first Man, is never taken away from him; he uses the “power” for right purposes, or for evil purposes as is represented in this “seal,” the perversion of this “power” is acquired by Man, allowed but not given by God.

ver. 5 and 6. The opening of the “third seal” releases the third thousand years, the time from the call of Abraham to the dedication of the Hebrew Temple.

The “black horse” is the symbol of COMPLETE KNOWLEDGE with Man; that in every age, Man has sufficient knowledge to guide himself aright, and he may pervert the use of this to selfish, foolish, earthly or evil purposes.

ver. 7 and 8. The opening of the “fourth seal” is the symbol of the fourth thousand years of Man, the time is from the dedication of the Temple to the coming of Jesus.

This is the 2nd period, or the time of the 2nd beast, and the end of the first dispensation, the Law of God in 12 parts existed during this dispensation, but could not be used, as Man was not ready for it; this is symbolized by the 12 “elders” previously noted. The second dispensation now begins, and is symbolized by the other 12 “elders”; Christ, in His ministry

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

here, set a living symbol before the people, that the full or whole Law, was then in the hands of Man, in His appointing, and setting apart the 12 disciples.

The “pale horse,” this should read mixed, grizzled, spotted, gray, or speckled, as this horse is the symbol of the MIXTURE, or the uniting together of ALL THE OTHER THREE POWERS in varying proportions, making this the fourth power, and the responsibility rests with this power for the existence of the greater part of the evil in the world.

Under this symbol we see the use of the power given to Man, perverted to an alarming extent; the “fourth part” does not relate to territory, or numbers of people, but refers back to what has already been said concerning this power being the fourth one; we may not stop here to review the ungodly conditions of the 20th century, but if we did we could truthfully say that the major part of the godlessness on the Earth today, is enacted under this symbol.

ver. 9, 10 and 11. The opening of this “5th seal” is the symbol of the release of the 5th thousand years of Man, the time is from the birth of Jesus to the year 1000 A. D.

The principal condition during this period recorded, is that of the acceptance of many who have been faithful workers for GOD and Christ! this is in the new dispensation, and these have labored long and unceasingly, under the most fearful conditions, and it is seen and known by Christ that they have done enough, it is not necessary that they strive further, for they have proved beyond all doubt their loyalty to their Creator and Savior, so they are regarded as having fulfilled all that is required of them; this is symbolized by the “white robe;” their “cry” is not an actual occurrence of any one particular time, or of any one particular religious body, but is the great and sincere longing of individuals, many of whom, tired and weary,

and longing for home, as they fight and die at the hands of the very devils of hell, appeal to the Great Deliverer, and He takes them and places them, where they can rest, under His care, until the next thousand years is complete.

It is fully understood that when God or Christ sees any person who has reached a state of perfection, there is no need for such to do more; in the old disposition many, we know, as Enoch, probably Abraham, Moses, Elijah, Daniel and doubtless very many others were known to have done all they could do in their time, so it was of no use for them to return to the earth afterward and do it all over again; but these were not perfect according to the standard of The Whole Law in Christ, Daniel 12. 13. shows this; so they had to return again after the ascension, and come under the full law; this is proven by the teaching of Jesus concerning John the Baptist in Matt. 11. 11.; this why so many in this time are taken away to rest until the end; it is not necessary that this act occur at any one, and only one particular time, but it may extend over the whole 2000 years; we have no method of knowing whether any who are found worthy by Christ, after having died, return here again or are at rest, so this condition may continue through this period until near the end, when an entirely different condition arises.

Previous to the end of the work week, as is shown by the teachings of Christ and prophecy, fearful conditions are to rise, wherein man intends to rule the earth for himself, and ignore Christ; this is predicted in the 7th chapter of Daniel, hence it might be that there would be a complete annihilation of all truth, unless a new condition of power arises; so, just previous to the end, it is seen that it is not necessary for those to die and wait, who are true to Christ, but instead He bestows the power of truth on these and they remain as the living examples of truth till the end, this will be shown in the next day.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

These may not as yet join Christ as one with Him, as the time is not yet passed, but when the full time is come, these together with others who are alive, and who will drop the physical condition and be changed, will then join Him for all eternity; the disciples knew that this was to be done, and Paul especially; see 1st Thess. 4. 15-18.

It is not necessary that each or any of these 1000 year periods be exactly 1000 years. During the old dispensation the limits were very close, and varying but little; so in the new dispensation there is no reason why the limits should be exact to the time symbol given.

verses 12-17. The “6th seal” is the symbol of the 6th thousand years of Man, and this thousand completes his week, and is the time from 1000 A. D. to 2000 A. D.

The “earthquake” signifies a fearful and mighty upheaval amongst all of the peoples of the earth; this was shown to Daniel in the 7th chapter, but he did not understand it, and is taught by Jesus in Matt. 24th chapter.

The “darkened sun” signifies the almost universal ignoring of God and Christ, and the Law; the earth being turned into a slaughter pen, with debauchery, selfishness and idolatry the ruling power.

The “falling of the stars” signifies the actual appearing of the power of God and Christ in the earth.

All of this is fully explained in Matt. 24th chap. by Jesus.

As the “time of the end” draws near, and the “abomination of desolation” is as evident in the hearts of men, as it was in the temple worship, when the Great Deliverer was ruthlessly murdered, the power of Christ appears as LIGHT (the ABSOLUTE TRUTH), this at first appears in only one person, then in many others as they are sought out by the truth, and each

one of these is empowered with full authority to do Christ's will, as will be shown to each one.

And this is recognized by all, evil and good; those desirous of living for Christ hail it with delight, others with dismay and hatred; as this power appears, it begins in a very small way, but gathers headway rapidly, as soon as wise men see the real meaning of it, until it becomes world wide.

Each of these individuals, recognized by Christ as being competent, receive this full power, and while they assume no authority over others, yet they exercise this power for peace as dictated to them and in stopping the brutal conditions amongst men; no other earthly power has any control over these, and it has the effect of causing the evil and ungodly to become scared and exceedingly fearful as their power becomes worthless, while they, as a rule, all the while hate and denounce Christ.

This condition begins sometime previous, and near to, the end of this 6th time period, and continues till near the end, or until it is known that no more are to become one with those who are now the godly ones in the earth.

Rev. 7. verses 1-9. The scene now changes, although this is a continuation of the same picture; in this we get a better explanation of the conditions in the 6th chap. 13th and 14th verses.

The "angels" symbolize the spirit or power of Christ in the earth, in Man; the "four winds" the lawless and ungodly mixed combination of all the powers of the earth, and "holding" these represents the truth in Man as acting in defense of peace and truth, until all who desire to come to Christ in this the eleventh hour, have done so.

The "seal" is the light, the absolute truth, the inward indwelling of the power of God and Christ, and symbolized by the number 7. and this repeated 3 times, as it were, as in 7. 7. 7.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

to show that such a person is recognized as being perfect before God, under His Law, and as one of His creatures, or His work; so we see how the whole plan of men to defeat Christ comes to naught, as all earthly power becomes subject to the truth.

Of those "sealed" we have only to note the symbols to read the meaning; the naming of the twelve tribes of Israel, simply stand as a symbol to show that these who are sealed are absolutely perfect under the whole law; the seal or light is the Urim, and the 12 is the Thummim.

The word "thousand" as a multiple of 10, shows that the numbers of chosen ones is incomplete, and might have been added to, had others desired to be with them.

From the 9th to the 17th verses show that at the time of the end, Christ has called away all His own from the earth, those alive, and others at rest, and together they are one with Him, and others, angels, who have previously been through similar conditions; John sees the final end of this portion of Man, and it is fully explained to him in his vision, how these arrived to this condition in which he sees them; to us today, this seems plain, but to him it was all a mystery.

Rev. 8. The opening of the 7th "seal," reveals the 7th or last day of the 1000 years of Man on the earth, the time from 2000-3000 A. D.

The picture scenes shown to us representing this period, are entirely different from those previously seen; we shall now be shown an entire period without any true worship of God, or an acknowledgment of Christ in it, although man is well informed concerning both, and the Infinite Law, and the history of those who were the saints of Christ, who were taken away at the end of the last epoch as well.

And during this time Man is thoroughly warned concerning his condition, and what the result is to be of his absolutely

ignoring the Divine Law, as he will have all of the records of the past including the full revelation of God with complete translations to guide him, but this will not change him, and so this day closes with not a single one, so far as we can learn, acknowledging Christ.

As the Whole Spirit, (not Holy, the word Holy in this connection, in the New Testament ought never to have been written, as it is misleading) or power of God in Christ through his servants has now been taken away from the earth, this Spirit is now to rule from His realm.

The “7 angels” represent the whole power of God; the “7 trumpets” the active absolute authority or word of God; the “angel with the censer” the combined spirit of truth in Christ and His followers, before God; this spirit not only appeals to God, but as it has severed all connection with the earth by violently denouncing the prevailing conditions, and in leaving the entire day and the human beings to the direct authority of God, God gives it the authority to rule in the earth over those left there, as is shown in verses 1-6.

The “half hour” is a period of time equal to about 42 years, appearing here subsequent to the departure of the Christians, and previous to the beginning of the activity of the law controlling this next period, wherein conditions do not change much amongst men; while the “7 angels” signify that this day is divided into 7 parts instead of 12 as heretofore, yet the acts of the authority of each of these is not confined to any one separate period, and at the same time the authority of all 7 is over all this time, although the authority of any one of these may be more apparent, by the results, amongst men, during certain times than during others.

The “third part” does not refer to the destruction of an actual number or quantity of anything on the earth, but refers

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

to any one or all of the 3 personalities of God, as Himself, His Law, and His Work, as now accomplishing His purposes.

verses 7-13. These show terrific earth disturbances, with great destruction of animal, vegetable, and human life; and this embraces the revelation of the first four periods or days.

Rev. 9. These next 3 periods reveal the power of God as dealing almost exclusively with man alone, and for this reason, the word "woe" is used.

verses 1-12. "the bottomless pit" is the combined capacity for evil, or the supreme condition of antagonism to God, with Man; the "darkening of the sun" is symbolical of the shutting out of God, by Man, from himself, by his own degeneracy, and the "locusts" symbolize degenerate Man; Man is still treated by God as a human being despite his deep seated rebelliousness, for the will power once given to him is never taken away until the final judgment, but at the same time he is seen to be only an animal, as is now represented.

The "5 months" is symbolism for a period of time of about 500 years, in which Man is tormented to the very door of death, by the fearful evils perpetrated upon each other by these horrible animal-man like beasts, and he would take his own life but does not dare to, as the awful fear of death is worse than the fear of living in torment.

The word "apollyan" signifies satan, or the perverted will power of Man, and is often called the serpent, dragon, devil, abaddon, and father of lies.

The word "seal" is only used as a term to denote the recognition of a human being by God as being perfect in truth, as others who are perfect in sin are simply "marked," though the number 7 may be applied to them, or to a complete evil condition, to show perfection in sin, but the law in connection

with such a person or condition is 10, and never 12, as there is no life in it.

verses 12-21. The symbolical meaning of the word "horns" is power, either finite or Infinite, in this case it signifies Infinite power.

The "great river" and "Euphrates" are synonymous, and this is symbolical of the origin of the human family; the "four angels—loosed" represent the 4th or mixed power of earth, less the power of truth, as this has been destroyed; this is not shown here, but will be seen later on.

"An hour," "a day," "a month," "a year," are synonymous in that they each mean the same thing, or, that they represent full periods of time, and taken together are symbolical of the whole time of Man on the earth; the "third part" here emphasizes the fact that this death dealing power, originating with man in the beginning, and existing through all the time of Man here, is now determined to destroy one or all of the 3 personalities of God in the earth, as far as Man is concerned.

It is out of this "great river" that this self-destruction originates and develops to the entire annihilation of Man in the end, as symbolized by the tails of the "scorpions" and "horses"; in the 20th and 21st verses is shown the absolute intention of Man to worship himself, and his own desires.

Rev. 11 13th-19th verses. The "seventh angel" represents the 7th power and last division of the time of Man on the earth before the final judgment; in this is shown the absolute and complete destruction of the human race on the earth, as symbolized in verse 13, which should have been placed between verses 15 and 16, as the "earthquake" "tenth" and "7 thousand" declare this to be the end of Man; the last clause of this verse should have been added to the end of the 12th verse, and shows that those who were left at the time, and after

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

the Christians were taken away, recognized the fact that it was an act of God and Christ, and said so, while at the same time it made no appreciable difference in their lives to change them; what is really to transpire during this last time of Man, is not allowed to be written by John, as it is only to be revealed at the beginning of that period; all else that is represented as occurring at this time, is that, as all the human family is now destroyed, the personalities of God now recognize the fact, that the time of the final judgment is at hand, and the end of the mystery of Creation is to be fulfilled; the 19th verse shows the resumption of His authority by God, without any active antagonistic influences in the earth.

We now turn to the 15th and 16th chapters of Rev. This is one picture, and is a resume of the same time and conditions as those which have just been reviewed, as concerning the last 1000 years of Man on the earth, with a slightly different presentation; why this repetition, is not plain, it may have been retranslated, or retranscribed, or it may have been rewritten by John, or it may have been an entirely separate picture, we are inclined to favor the latter, as the slight differences here presented in symbol, really explain more plainly some of the conditions, which appear obscure in the former picture.

The 15th chap is given to showing the conditions of the Christians of the first resurrection, as being alive and active with Christ before God, in the spiritual realm, and away from all temptation and evil; the "wrath of God" should never have been used in God's word; God does not get angry, or sorry; He does not get ugly and visit punishment through vengeance on Man, the one great fact that is clearly brought out in the symbolical pictures of the Revelation of God to Man, is that Man is the origin of his own evil and destruction; His Law is everlasting, and there is no change in Him or His Laws; the

recognition and keeping of the laws of God by man results in its own reward, as eternal life; while the ignoring or breaking of these laws either through ignorance or knowledge, results in destruction and absolute death, for no being can exist within the realm of God, except such as are loyal to Him, and who can and will work with Him.

Rev. 16 verse 12. This is a better symbolization of the conditions during this time, than is given in the 9th chap., as it shows that the vital living principle, the truth, with Man, as having been lost, in the picture of the "water of the Euphrates being dried up", while the "frogs" symbolize the reptilian, satanic or evil spirit only, as now at work in the hearts and minds of men; and not only this, but this evil power is the one agent that will mark Man for his final destruction, and will appear at the judgment as willfully antagonistic to the law of God, as shown in the 14th verse; but the spirit tells the writer John, that the spirit of God can see and will know the sign, the inward motive, the secret and hidden conclusions of Man's will and determinations, even though every vestige of physical existence is destroyed; in verse 15 a kind, sympathetic, and friendly warning is now placed before Man, 2000 years or more before these awful scenes are enacted, as God sees them, that Man might be thoroughly warned of the terrible time coming.

Verse 19 is here shown in the right place, and not as in chap. 11; in the last clause of verse 21, the word "hail" signifies the symbol of the truth crystallized or pure, and the last of the human family destroyed by it, through rebellion against God and His Law, and this closes this awful picture of the last 1000 years on the earth.

Concerning this second picture of this last 1000 years, this may have been presented in slightly different pictures, at different times, as things and conditions usually are which are of great

importance, to guard against loss, misunderstanding, and to cause Man to think more deeply, as will be seen later on in the different and separate symbolic pictures of the 3rd period of 2000 years of Man, showing how necessary it is that Man should understand it.

Rev. 10 and 11. These chapters seem at first to be out of place here, and to have no connection with the others, but it will be observed that John is being prepared for further work, as soon as he has finished recording the conditions of the 7th period of time, which is about to appear; the line along which he is to work will be different from that which he has been recording, as he will act more as a prophet and less as a scribe, although he doubtless really knew but little of the real meaning of what he saw and wrote, yet he knew enough to make it painful to him.

In the first 7 verses of the 10th chap. the power of God, symbolized as an “angel” appears in the earth, just previous to the last 7th period, and declares time to be finished, that is, the beginning of the end; also, that there are transactions to take place at that time which are not to be known until that period of time begins, for John was warned not to write what he heard concerning that time as spoken by the voice of God.

verses 8-11. The “little book” is knowledge, understanding, personal experience; for John to act as a prophet and write the message of truth from his beloved master, was pleasant indeed, but to write his personal experience of the past, and the life of his beloved savior was painful, for as much as he loved the master and the truth, he could not yet grasp the fact that his people had forever lost that greatest of all privileges, that of being the chosen nation of God; he could not bear to think of a heathen or gentile power crushing it out of existence, and of the wonderful temple being forever destroyed, he would write

as he was told, but it was bitter, especially as his words were to live for at least 3000 years, and stand as a witness to the awful infidelity of his people.

Of the complete biography of John, very little is known, and much of this is questionable, but it is quite possible that while he was in Asia minor, interested and at work establishing those centres of Christian faith, he wrote but little if any, along gospel lines; but when he became a prisoner in an isolated condition, Christ saw the opportunity of using him, for an especial purpose, so he was first given the Apocalypse to write, and while writing this, he was also told that he was not only to write these visions as seen by himself, but he was to write his own personal experiences as the disciple of Christ, and in his portraying the life of Christ as he knew it, he would show how He became the living temple, of which the stone temple was the symbol, while Christ would stand as the first born of all others of His generation.

In the 11th chap. the "reed like a rod" that was "given" to him, is the symbol of authority bestowed upon him; without the book and staff or rod, John could do nothing; these are symbolical with John of the Whole Spirit of God, and His Word, the "two witnesses" in the earth; these have all power in the earth in Nature to do as they will, but they may not coerce or compel man to do anything against his will, they may warn advise and teach, but they may not take possession of a person's will in any way, hence it is possible that these witnesses may be forced out, or their work stopped by evil.

The "reed" was not a measuring stick as it would appear from the context, but, handed to John, he became a prophet, and as a prophet he is to show how the temple, the furnishings, and the ceremonial ritual, were all symbols of what was to come in Jesus Christ; and he was to show how the temple was only a

symbol of the new human being in the new dispensation, and that as the old would be destroyed, so the Whole Spirit of God would enter the living being as a temple.

He was not to measure the "outer court," for all sacrifices contained in the ceremony, were symbols culminating in the one great Sacrifice, the curtain had been torn asunder, and the whole temple was now thrown open to the whole world, and the gentiles would have just as much right in the new temple as the children of Israel, and this would continue for about 1000 years, as in the 42 months; at the end of which time, the "two witnesses" would acquire more power and push forward in the great work of trying to deliver Man from slavery and bondage; these therefore work during the next 1000 years or 1260 days (the limits are not to be accepted as exact by the ordinary chronological reckoning, yet it is probably very near) when their work practically ceases, for the evil power in Man, arises in full power and completely stops their work, after which time, they, for the space of "3 1-2" days remain unable to do anything, and as "dead"; this pleases the inhabitants of the earth, to think that they have completely killed God's work on the earth; but after this time is passed, Christ calls for His own, and takes them away, this astonishes the people left behind, and they are afraid, knowing full well what it all means; this "3 1-2 days" is half of 7, or a whole time; the other half of which appears in the "half hour", when the seventh seal is opened in chap. 8, verse 1. these times are indefinite, as the limits are with the knowledge of Christ, and the Father. See Matt. 24: 36.

Rev. 12. This chapter deals in symbolical picture scenes representing certain general conditions through which the christian must pass during the 2000 years, from the birth of Jesus to the end of the year 2000 A. D. verse 1. the perfect "woman" is the symbol of the spirit of perfection, or complete-

PROPHECY AND PREDICTION

ness in Nature, as the origin of life; and this spirit or power in Nature brings forth a being who through his own will power becomes coequal with God, and was at His departure, called by God to His realm, as in verses 2 and 5; in verse 3 is presented the symbol of the perfect and complete spirit of evil in man.

This power originated in man with Adam, and is in direct antagonism to God, His Law, and His Work, and is death to Man; the “stars” are the symbols of these personalities of God in the earth, so that, as is shown in the 4th verse, sin is controlling these powers; as no human being up to the time of Jesus, had ever conquered it, to become victorious; Nature now, having prepared all things to her satisfaction, produces this “child” with the intention of forever subduing the supreme power of this evil; because if she does not do this, and do it at this time, with this one being prepared for this purpose, God’s plans in His work are forever frustrated.

So, as this “child” grows to maturity, the evil of the earth surges about Him in all of its fury, see Matt. 4: 1-12, until He finally completely conquers evil, and is called away from the evil to the realm of God as in verse 5.

Meantime, the spirit of truth in the earth, being harassed and bullied by this evil power, finds but little rest and peace except in secret and in isolation for 1000 years, as the 1260 days signify, as in the 6th verse.

This evil power dominant in the earth for 4000 years, holding the intentions of God in His plans in contempt, is broken by the will power of one Man, and the intentions of God are to be carried out; this evil in the will power of Man, carried to the very throne of God, having now received its staggering blow, the original intentions of God are resumed after 4000 years, and this evil spirit only finds a place of refuge where it is allowed by Man; this is shown in symbol in the 8th-11th verses, while

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

Christ symbolized as "Michael" with the whole power of God, as in the 7th verse, now controls sin, and all evil, and will aid and direct any human being to fight, and completely control this power.

The 12th and 13th verses show the awful fight between the victorious truth and evil in man during the first 1000 years A. D. and that a great many were recognized by Christ as being victorious during this time; but the fight grows more fierce and it is necessary that truth be found a safe refuge or it is in danger of being overwhelmed, so a new place is found, and greater power is given to it, where for the remaining 1000 years, as the "time, times, and half times," indicate, it grows and finishes its work under great trial, as is shown in the verses 14-17.

Rev. 13. Again we have a picture scene of the 2000 years beginning with the birth of Jesus and ending with the first resurrection.

verse 1. The "beast" is the symbol of the perfect and complete spirit of evil in Man where it originated, Man is symbolized by the "sea", and this spirit of evil is represented as it existed at the time of the birth of Jesus; the "dragon" is the symbol of evil under the name Satan during the old dispensation, it is noted that this is the mixed power of evil, showing no element of truth, in other words, it is the fourth power of the earth with the truth perverted, as is shown in the 5th and 6th verses; Christ's victory over sin "wounded" or stopped this perversion of the truth for the time, but it again assumed power, although the SCAR is apparent through all of the 2000 years; this prolific, prosperous, world wide and powerful spirit of evil, assumes alarming proportions, as it boasts of its nearly absolute earthly power, but at about the end of the first 1000 years, symbolized by the "42 months", and when it seemed as though

the spirit of truth in the earth was about to become subject to this brutal and tyrannical power of evil there arises a condition wherein this evil power becomes hostile to itself, and while thus engaged as in verse 10, the spirit of truth had an opportunity to recuperate; after this, evil did not dare to show itself as such a rough, uncouth, brutal, beast-like power of tyranny, but in order to accomplish its full purpose, assumed the more gentle way of imitating the truth, in an underhanded, sneaking, and hypocritically sympathetic method of attack, and in such a way as often to deceive the unsuspecting, ignorant, and careless, but determined on destruction as fully as its former counterpart, satan; and in fact, acquiring such power, that again, as the end of the next 1000 years draws near, he begins to assume the full power of authority over the nations of the earth, as it is drenched in blood, seething with hatred, hypocrisy and lust, and fighting like wild beasts for authority and power, under the guise of philanthropy, liberty, and love of humanity, permeating all religious, business, political and educational lines, until the command is issued that none are recognized and accepted by this power as loyal and law-abiding, who do not concur and join this popular and world-wide mighty throng of idlodatrous self-worshippers, whose definite and profound intention is, to completely change the times, and subject the earth at all costs, to itself; this was shown to Daniel in the 7th chap. but he did not grasp it, and Jesus saw and taught it as in Matt. 24th chap. and this condition reaches its height just previous to the end of this second thousand years.

Christ, from His realm, now seeing that there is no need of further strife, as Man is now determining his own position, holds up this power, and begins the calling of His own, wherever they may be found, and as they are searched out, and known to be true, they are each of them sealed, or given full power to stop

this fearful system of evil, holding it down with an iron hand till all are sought out and sealed, and none others are to come, then a short time elapses of a few years, to provide any and all who desire to do so, an opportunity of declaring for Christ before it is too late, then as none appear, these sealed ones sealed with the number 7. 7. 7. are called to Christ.

The great work week of Man is closed, and his work is done, Nature has finished what was given her to do; those who are left behind upon the earth, are incomplete, unfinished, and imperfect, and as such may not leave the earth, they are chained here and carry the mark or symbol of their time and work; as they did not finish their complete work within the allotted time, so they are accounted as 6. as they did not obey God's Law, but made laws of their own which they obeyed, they are in this accounted as 6. and as they were now unloyal to God or Christ, preferring self, and the things of the earth, so in this they are accounted as 6. making the number as it appears in verse 18, 666, but is really 6. 6. 6.

Rev. 14th and 18th chapters. These chapters are very similar, in that they are one continuous picture of the same time and conditions, and portrayed in the same manner; the time, is the latter part of the last epoch, just previous to the final disappearance of Man from the earth; the first 5 verses of the 14th chap. describe the condition of Christ and His followers in the realm of light and truth; that the redeemed have been in this condition for a length of time, is evident by the 3rd verse; the meaning of the first clause of the 4th verse is, that these redeemed, were not enticed away to lust after the things of time, but that Christ was the first and only love; the 5th verse shows growth and progress, intimating again that these are still learning, and preparing for another condition, undoubtedly to occur at the time of the final judgment.

PROPHECY AND PREDICTION

We now listen to the heralds, as they bring news of the action on, and concerning the earth.

In the 6th and 7th verses, the herald, as the spirit of truth, whose special responsibility was, the making known to man the will of God, now declares that the end of time has come, and that the final judgment of man is at hand.

These "7 angels" or heralds might be read as the "7 thunders" or 7 voices of God, as in the 4th verse of the 10th chap., but this we do not know.

The 2nd herald, in the 8th verse, declares that the time of the end is near, or that the beginning of the end is at hand; "Babylon" is a symbolic term, used to signify slavery, bondage, servitude, confusion, idolatry and selfishness.

The 3rd herald, now reviews the past, showing the reason and cause of this great destruction of mankind on the earth, in the 8th-12th verses; while in the 12th and 13th verses the reason is shown, why those with Christ are as they are, and why they became so.

The 14th verse, shows Christ as having authority from God to end time, the "sickle" representing time; while the 15th verse, shows Christ receiving power to end time at once, as the 4th herald delivers his message; while the 16th verse shows the action begun.

The 5th herald, as a representative of God Himself, now acts with Christ, as in the 17th verse, and is directed by the 6th herald, a special and trusty messenger, representing the whole power of God, as the "fire" would signify, to begin the work of the end of man at once, as in the 18th verse, while the 19th and 20th verses show the self destruction of man, by the power of sin, to be advancing at a frightful rate.

Rev. 18th chap. the last or 7th herald, now reviews the scenes of the conditions on the earth during the very last short

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

space of time before the final end, as man is actually being forever taken away; this shows how well everything in the plan of God is foreknown; when, 3000 years before these events take place, every detail is known; this chapter is very plain, and needs no explanation, with what we already know.

Rev. 17. This chapter is remarkable, in that it contains so much in so small a compass, and it needs a great deal of explanation to make it plain; before any attempt is made at revealing the hidden meaning in symbols here, it seems necessary that it be prefaced by a short consideration of certain conditions, not before fully considered, to the better understanding of what is meant.

It has been said, that God does not deal with organizations, or aggregations on the earth, but with the individual, but the limits of this statement should be extended; God does not deal with governments or nations, either in business, polities, religion or education. He deals with the individual alone, and if there are aggregations, the individual is the unit.

It is of no interest to the Father, or the Savior, that there are religious organizations, numbering their followers by multitudes, and calling themselves Protestants, Catholics, Mohammedans, Confucians, Buddists, Fire-worshippers, or Fetish Savages, but is of very great interest to both the Creator and Redeemer, that a single human being is unspeakably anxious to know them, and the truth, so as to obey it.

A human being, is supposed, by the Creator, to have one desire alone, and only one, to want with all the strength of the inner being to know the truth as God's will, so as to do it, causing all the efforts of an existence here to act to this one end, this is loyalty to God, true worship, and obedience to His Law; anything else beside this, with the human being, no matter what

it is, is antagonism to God, and idolatry; no matter how much it may appear to be like the truth, or how far removed.

Revelation very explicitly sets forth the fact, that for one to accept as his supreme authority to control him, the works of his own hands, his words or laws, or his own thoughts, reasonings, or desires, is as much of an idolater as the heathen with his crude wooden image.

verse 1. This verse shows us, as the others heretofore have, that the conditions to take place on the earth as concerned with man, are all previously known in detail, to God and Christ; in this picture presented to John, the scenes show the complete self-destruction of all idolatry with the human race, as the other scenes in other pictures show the self-destruction of antagonism to God; so, it is easily seen, that God, by His spirit, does not need to harass, plague, torment, or curse man, neither does He do so, for all He has to do is to allow man to have his own way, and do just as he chooses, letting him have complete control over himself, and his self-destruction is sure.

“Woman” is used not only as the symbol of the spirit of truth in Nature, but also as the symbol of the origin of the spirit of anti-truth or idolatry with man.

In the 2nd verse, it is seen how the multitudes of the earth, through the individual, have been prostituted, through having allowed this spirit of idolatry to dwell within.

In verse 3, “scarlet beast,” is the symbol of sin, or antagonism to the Creator, and His Law; the “names of blasphemy” are many, as serpent, satan, devil, dragon, beast, etc.

The “sitting” upon the “beast” by the “woman” shows that the spirit of idolatry in man really controls the spirit of antagonism to God.

With God and His Law there is no such thing or condition as that of being partly right and partly wrong. Either a human being is altogether right and perfect in the end, or else he is altogether wrong. So, as one without blemish is symbolized by 7 and 12, so one with blemish is symbolized by 7 and 10.

The clothing and ornaments of the woman show that there is an attempt at imitating the truth in deception; while the "golden cup" further signifies hypocrisy, and, "filled with filthiness" and "abominations," shows such idolatrous, superstitious and foolish rites and ritual as is contained in all the multitudes of methods of man-established religions, religious rites and ceremonies.

5th verse. This verse gives us words which stand as symbols of the outlines of the component parts of this false and idolatrous structure.

"Mystery" signifies mystery or superstition, mysterious, foolish, silly, nonsense, in rite, ritual and ceremony. "Babylon" means confusion, deception, foolish conceptions without meaning. The "mother of harlots" shows that this spirit of idolatry in man is the origin or source of all false, godless, selfish, sensual, silly and meaningless worship of man-made idols.

The 6th verse shows that the spirit of idolatry bears the responsibility for the fearful treatment and death of those whose life intention was to serve God and obey the truth.

The word "admiration" should read astonishment or perplexity.

The latter half of the 8th verse explains the first half, though a word may be said in explanation. The serpent, satan, dragon, or beast, symbol of the original disobedience and sin, in man, to God, held supreme sway in the earth, from the fall of Adam to the crucifixion of Christ, whether man would or

not. During this time God prepared man to destroy it, and the Great Sacrifice did destroy it, then and forever afterward, if man willed to have it so destroyed, otherwise it remained as before to such ones.

The "bottomless pit" is the symbol of the degenerated inner being of man, and from this position or stronghold sin is eventually to be absolutely destroyed.

The 9th verse shows that this "beast" occupies the whole 7 periods of the time of man, or 7000 years, and likewise is prominent in all of the earth; while the 10th verse shows that certain periods of time have passed (fallen), are passing, with others yet to come, in the which, the internal and complete power of sin is in existence, and that the last power in sin and time to appear is to "continue a short space," meaning the same as the "1 hour" in the 12th verse, or one day of 1000 years.

The 11th verse shows that the previously mentioned "7 heads," and "7 kings," together with the "10 horns," or "10 kings" of the 12th verse, are simply symbols of the internal power and endurance of sin in the earth, the 10 standing for self, man, or earth-made law, which man has made to control himself, but this law is not to be absolute until during the last period of 1000 years.

This law is to fight and drive out truth from out of the earth from the beginning of this period. Physically speaking, this internal power of evil, as represented by this earth-law 10, cannot fight the spirit of truth elsewhere than on the earth during this period; but when man as a physical being becomes extinct, then the awaiting souls, with this evil earth-law graven on each one, would make the attempt to carry the war into the spiritual world, or the realm of God, but this is eternally destroyed by the power in Christ, of the truth in the end, as

is shown in the 13th and 14th verses, while the 15th verse explains itself.

The 16th verse shows that the hatred and antagonism to God and Christ is the only prevailing internal power carried over into the spiritual world with the souls of men. As all the incentives to idolatrous worship have been taken way from man, or man has been removed from these incentives, such as earthly wealth, honor, power and all selfish motives, hence, man's idolatry is destroyed, and he enters the judgment-hall of Christ, a self-appointed and self-condemned rebel. This is shown in the 17th verse.

If the 18th verse read,—the “woman” symbolizes the great idolatrous multitudes of the earth, which are the controlling power, it would be better understood.

We will now turn to Rev. the 19th, 20th, 21st, and 22nd chapters.

The picture scenes here in these last chapters describe the conditions during the last 1000 years of man on the earth, a little differently from the pictures previously seen, this condition also embraces the final judgment.

The first 10 verses of the 19th chapter show the Christians of the “first resurrection,” with Christ, recognized by God as perfect, and given the power of truth to act with Christ; it is not necessary to take each verse and explain the meaning of the symbolism, as the meaning is very clear, while at the same time, from the 11th to the 17th verses, is shown the character, position, and authority of Christ; a peculiar condition in these chapters appears, and is more plainly seen than has been noticeable before; it would appear as though Christ, from His reception into the realm of God until the first resurrection, or during this 2000 years, acted more as a younger member of the great fraternity of God, and not as assuming

PROPHECY AND PREDICTION

the greater responsibilities, although having all power necessary, and any number of celestial beings, willing and capable of carrying out His will; yet He appears as one bent on saving every last human being from sin possible on the earth, and uses all His powers, and authority for this purpose, and dealing with each human being, as an individual; but when this condition ceased, He then appears to assume a greater authority, and uses all His power to fight man's will to the death, during the last 1000 years; and during this time the loved ones of Christ are more in the position that He occupied in that realm previously, and these are at rest and at peace, and during this last 1000 years of unregenerate man these are using every effort to bring to the notice of man his condition and the fearful consequences into which he is plunging, until the final end is very near, and then these are stopped from doing anything more, as in the 18th chapter and 4th verse; and not using the authority and power they have, for the more important fights, but studiously trying to get accustomed to and understand their new environment, and doing minor work, leaving the greater responsibilities to the 'armies of God' led now by "Christ"; it is evident, from the reading, that in the future, after the judgment, the redeemed of Christ, will be classed as one with the experienced and mighty armies of God.

The verses 17-21 signify the end of Man on the earth; in the last clause of the 21st verse, "fowls were filled" signifies that the complete time is fulfilled, and ended.

In the beginning of the 20th chapter we begin once more with Christ in power in the realm of God, the great and supreme power of evil has been conquered, and it can only work as it is allowed in the hearts of men, by their will, but this condition is so world-wide, and almost universal, that it is symbolized as the "bottomless pit," and in this condition evil

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

works till the next 1000 years are completed, meanwhile the redeemed are with Christ as in the first 6 verses, and this is the end of man, as in the 21st verse of the 19th chapter.

With the 7th verse begins the final judgment of man; in this verse it is shown that his evil spirit has not yet been destroyed, although man as a physical being has been completely destroyed from off the earth, but the souls of these still exist, and combined, is this great power of evil, "satan," with his great number, as in the 8th verse; and in the 9th verse is shown the final destruction of all evil, as it comes into contact with the truth, and power of God, but the details are given in the verses 10-15; first, evil is completely destroyed, then the earthly and heavenly conditions, as related to man, forever pass away, and then all of those who were on the earth, stand up before God, and out of "the book of life," the individual human soul, each one is judged by what is therein written, by the individual himself, and he is really his own judge, as in the 12th and 13th verses.

The "sea" is the symbol of the human family; "death and hades" are synonymous, and symbolize the condition of a human being after physical death, until the soul is destroyed; the second resurrection, and second death, are really synonymous, for, as soon as the soul leaves its state of confinement, when called by God, to His realm, and not back to the earth again, it comes into contact with the light, and is destroyed by its own worthlessness, as the soul element of man is separated from the eternal light element of God, the latter returning to Him; the "lake of fire" is the eternal conditions, existence, and power of God in all His attributes.

The 15th verse shows that everything in connection with the earth, has been destroyed, save Christ and those with Him.

The first 9 verses of the 21st chapter need no explanation,

PROPHECY AND PREDICTION

as the meaning is obvious; beginning with the 10th verse, the realm or abiding place of the chosen of God through Christ, from the earth, is symbolized throughout the rest of this chapter.

It is to be borne in mind that, all things physical have been left behind now, and conditions are as at the very beginning from whence all things and conditions originated.

We now have only the light and vibrations, God and His Power, unconfined, unlimited, acting along innumerable lines to perfection; perfected beings from this and other spheres, all having a part in the great creative process of new parts continually being added to the universe, as other parts are being destroyed or torn down; these beings have no physical outline, form or limitation, they are only measured by the power they have the ability to use, which is neither greater nor less, and there is no physical thing nor condition, however small or dense, where these beings may not enter; each of these beings is the image or counterpart of God in miniature; as the individual is the unit of the vast throng, leaving this earth for the eternal existence with Christ as the leader; so this aggregation, with Christ, is a unit in the innumerable hosts of God.

“Jerusalem” is used as a symbol of this condition of activity, truth and power; the “wall” or limits of the “city” has “length, breadth, and height” and these are “equal,” this shows us that, this new condition of existence for earthly beings is limited only by God, His Law, and Work.

The 12th verse shows us that entrance to this condition, is through the whole law, as the condition itself rests on a foundation of the whole Law of God, as in the 14th verse; everything connected with this condition, is shown to be founded on God’s Law, but is being continually changed, torn

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

down, and rebuilt, or added to, as the "12 thousand" signify; the "foundation" "stones" are used to definitely symbolize God, and His Law, the colors representing God in His attributes, while the 12 signify His Law.

The words "pearl," "gold," and "glass" signify that, the absolute truth within this condition, where all is perfect loyalty to God, is beyond compare, inestimable, as is further shown in the rest of the chapter.

In the 22nd chapter, the "river" is the symbol of the eternal life issuing from God, and the "tree of life" with "twelve manner of fruits" represents God and His Law again; while the rest of this chapter tells its own story.

As this is the last and the greatest, of all things in prophecy and prediction, relating to Man, it will close this chapter.

CHAPTER VII

The Gospel, or Revelation of God, By Jesus Christ

The Gospel, or word of God, by Jesus, is summed up in the second chapter and 14th verse, of Luke; not as it reads, but as it should read,—peace on earth to men of God's will.

That Jesus was born a human being, with a line of God's ancestry behind Him, pouring all of its power, vigor and might for the right, for the truth, into Him, that He might accomplish His purpose, and that His life and death, should be no experiment, but a pre-established fact, while at the same time, He be a person with a free will to choose, and determine of Himself, stands without contradiction; and thus He styles Himself "The Son of Man," and in John 10:13, and in Matt. 4:1-12, is shown very plainly that He was allowed His own free will and choice.

The reason of the coming of Jesus, at the time when He came, was because it was absolutely necessary; first, the time had come; second, all of the conditions necessary to bring forth a man powerful enough to meet the requirements, had been fully arranged by Nature; and third, the human family had become one vast sewage of filth, vice and sin, selfishness and idolatry, necessitating this transaction, while at the same time He was neither more nor less than this, as all others must be who were to follow Him, and become as He was, in the centuries to follow.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

And this is where the gravest mistake is being made by man, in this 20th century; he has come to think that God or Christ will somehow overlook the lifelong selfish acts of a person, and out of pity, and just because he selfishly wishes it, find him a place in the realms of truth, with God and the Savior; this selfish, superstitious nonsense, is called the “Fatherhood of God.”

The 3rd chapter of John, is very explicit in its straightforward statements, while the very life and acts of Jesus Himself, show clearly, how absolutely subject and submissive to the Law of God, a human being must be, to arrive at perfection.

The Gospel of Jesus is very plain, and easily understood, even though some of it is in symbol, to those who wish to know, and all the essays and digests in the world would not make it clearer.

The real intention in bringing forward the Gospel here for consideration, is to call attention to one very important point; this point has been noticed, but the real value, and importance of it, has not yet been considered; the point is this, the **ABSOLUTE COMMAND**, which is the centre, the life, the basis of all that Jesus taught, and as coming direct from the **FATHER, MUST BE OBEYED.**

Man is relying altogether too much on the leniency, pity, tenderness, mercy, love, and fatherhood of God, and brotherhood of Christ; all this has already been given to the man who uses his whole being in keeping the Law of God, but to none else; it is not intended, and man is not expected to think, that these attributes in Christ, are to act for the benefit of Man, until he has first done all that he possibly can to obey the Law of God, and obey this Law, he **MUST**; nothing, no explanation, no essay, could make the matter plainer, than the life and death of the Savior; pushing everything and every condition to one

THE GOSPEL, OR REVELATION OF GOD, BY JESUS CHRIST

side, in order to strictly obey the will of God, He counted all else as worthless, and taught this in all His works, and that what He did, all others must do.

Selfishness must be obliterated from the human being, by himself, if he would attract the notice of the spirit of power in Christ.

Having the motto "in God we trust" embossed on the commercial coins we use; genuflecting before representations of Christ, either in painting or in sculpture; refraining to use obscene and profane language before certain people, because of what they might think; going to church every Sunday, and taking a prominent part in society slumming, and in elemosynary contributions, is not keeping the Law of God.

Unless the DESIRE to want to know, and keep the Law of God, is paramount to all else in the heart of a person, the rest is all as so much rubbish, and if a man will not allow Christ, as the whole spirit of truth, to direct and control him now, there is no use in his hoping for benefits from Christ, in the future, it is all for God through Christ, or nothing.

And it is of no use for one to depend on the power of the associated many, each individual human being is alone with Christ, and to Him the answer must be, and now, not to the multitude, these are worthless, and when the proper time comes, Christ will gather together His own, Himself, Man will not do it.

As this is the basis of the WHOLE LAW OF GOD, and the GOSPEL OF CHRIST, to Man, it is needless to consider other matters, concerning all of which is much better written in the writings contained in the Bible, than we can do it.

The excuse more often advanced for not having a well grounded knowledge concerning the plans of God in Creation, is, that the revelation, if there is such a thing, is too mys-

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

terious to be understood, and therefore is of but little use, if any at all, and as theoretical, is set aside.

This not only shows foolishness, and weakness in the individual, as it is self evident that such an argument is made chiefly, to cover up questionable conduct, or acts indulged in, to satisfy animal and selfish propensities; there exists also within such a person, a well grounded suspicion that to admit the truth, would mean self-condemnation, thus showing that the Gospel, or Whole Power of God, in Christ, is not only contained in the written Word, but is at work as a mental, spiritual power in the minds of men, and is only destroyed by the will power of the individual himself; all this was recognized, and plainly made known, with necessary warnings by Jesus in Matt. 12th chapter, especially in the 32nd verse.

CHAPTER VIII

Prediction from the Year 1914

Thus far, it has been the aim, to note Nature's intention in Creation, follow her progress in development, and listen to what she had to say in regard to Man, concerning his past, present, and the future, in a general way.

I will now station myself in the year 1914 A. D. and from this point, with what has been learned, during the search, from the beginning of Creation, to the end of time, will try to show the position occupied by the human family at the present time, its condition as compared with prophecy, and the immediate future condition of mankind, as will be determined by his own actions.

The position of the human family in this year, is that of being right on the very verge of the beginning of a fearful, selfish, ugly strife.

According to the chronology of the calendar that we use today, which may or may not be correct for our purposes of estimation, the last hour of 84 years, of the last day of the Whole Spirit of God, begins at about this time; the knowledge of the teachings of Christ, and the Word of God, have been distributed to every people on the earth, and at this time, there are none who wish to know the truth, who may not fully understand it if they wish; the sharply defined lines which once marked the boundary between those who were absolutely for God, and those who were selfish, has now become almost unnoticeable, religion has been substituted for the truth, and, generally

speaking, any religion is sufficient, as one religion is as good as another, and the world as a whole is very religious, and extremely selfish.

During the last century, the mind of the civilized nations, has made the most remarkable progress along the lines of art, science, and invention, and this has brought in its wake wealth and power, honor and fame, and this has spread to all nations of the earth, causing the individual throughout the world, to seek for this one great power, WEALTH, and to get it at whatever cost, and this has bred distrust, hatred and jealousy, until the whole earth is one seething mass of an active, or latent spirit of antagonism to the truth, and filled with corruption and evil, ready to break out at any moment.

Even while I am writing this, a fierce war has broken out between European nations, which will without doubt enmesh all the rest of the earth, as all seem only too eager to partake in it, this is undoubtedly the beginning of the conditions which will ultimately result in there arising a power considering itself sufficient to control all the rest of the peoples of the earth, as was shown to Daniel, but before this can be accomplished, the whole earth will be drenched in blood, and the human race so far corrupted, as to entirely ignore God, or His Laws, as was shown to John in the Apocalypse.

But this intention of establishing a superior power by force to rule the world, and kill the truth, will not come to pass, for, before it gets full control, its power will be taken from it, and man, much against his will, for the time being, will be compelled to remain at peace, as a higher power through man will rule.

The prophetic utterances of Jesus in the 24th chapter of Matt. concerning these last days, needs no explanation.

PREDICTION FROM THE YEAR 1914

The conditions of these last days, as shown to Isaiah in chapter 2 is very plain, and it is not at all impossible, that this very excess of ugliness and selfishness of the peoples at this time, be not the means of awakening to living action, the power of truth to subdue and subject these same evil powers to peaceable conditions, and it may be that this fire has already begun to burn.

Nothing may be added to, or taken away from the prophetic part of the revelation of God through Christ, relating to the future of Man, the conditions to arise, as foreknown, are absolute, as are also the time limits, although the time limits appear indefinite to man, so that he must always be prepared for the coming events, and Jesus was very persistent in His teachings about this, that man should have fair warning.

With this, I shall close my last letter to you, adding only a short appendix for your perusal, and trusting that in what has been outlined, together with careful study of the details, to be found in their respective places, will be found all that is necessary as an answer to your interested inquiries.

Appendix

FOREWORD

These few personal dreams, more general than the rest, recorded here, are only a few, of a great number, that have been remembered and written down, these others being of a special private nature only, will be destroyed, and not published, and without doubt, there are a great many others, not remembered, or not retained through physical disability; these dreams cover every conceivable condition in life connected with the truth, teaching, warning, and guiding; no dreams are ever sent or received, to help or assist any person in any way, concerning wealth, earthly power, or selfish interests of any kind, they have nothing to do with religious sects, or organizations, governments, political economy, or general worldly welfare, they one and all, only and alone, point out the way of truth to man.

It is not intended that one person tell another his personal dreams, or to ask another for interpretations, although it is not unlawful, but it is supposed that a person is interested enough in his own welfare to seek out and discover the meaning of his own dreams, I do not wish to listen to the dreams of others, because, by the standard of truth, these would soon discover to me the private character of such persons, I have out of courtesy listened to the dreams of others, some of which, not necessarily of a very private nature, and the dreamer's name not being given, I will record, to show as evidence, that the method or system is the same with others, as with myself.

These dreams, and other incidents, are so placed here in the appendix, as to be easily studied alone, by the seeker after the

APPENDIX

truth, as the situation is better than in any other part of the letter.

A DREAM

The first dream that I remember to have ever had, and that remained with me, and made an impression on me, was one that occurred, I think, in 1884; there was no record made, but it is with me distinctly now in 1914.

I dreamed that I was winding up a long wearisome journey that I had made on foot, and that I was near to entering a big city, and I learned that as I crossed a bridge into this city, it was Chicago.

It was very late in the day, and I was very tired, hungry, and footsore; I crossed the bridge, going north, I think, and turned into the first street going west; I kept to the left side of the street, which was lined with great business blocks, behind which, ran a very wide alley, parallel with the river, which I had just crossed, this alley was on a very high masonry embankment, far above the river, and had a heavy iron pipe, or rail fence, whose heavy ball-topped posts were securely fastened on the granite wall, all of which, I discovered later.

I passed down this street a few doors, and then choosing a store, seemingly a dry-goods, or clothing store, I entered it, and in doing so I passed up quite a number of steps to get to the main floor, as this seemed to be quite a little above the main street.

I inquired of a clerk, or floor-walker, for the proprietor, and was directed to a small centrally located, independent room in the rear of the building on this same floor; this was 8 sided, and mostly all glass in the sides, and the interior was a private office, and in this office, I could see as I approached it, sat a venerable, benign, and very elderly looking man.

Approaching the door, I knocked, and was told to enter, which I did; I saw, too, that there was a middle aged woman

near by; asking me what I would have, I replied that I was looking for work, that I was tired as I had come a long way, and that I was hungry, but that I wanted to work to pay for food and rest; he heard me pleasantly without saying anything, but when I was through speaking, he called the same young man who had directed me to the office, and told him something that I did not understand, but this young man seemed to know just what to do; with this I was turned over to this young man, and he beckoned me to follow him; so we went out, and my guide opened a door just at the rear of the office, and this led down a flight of stairs, down which we both went to the basement below, and at the bottom, he opened the door leading out on to the alley behind this building, then as the light came in a little, I could see a pile of wood near by, and as I noticed this, he handed me a bucksaw, and sawbuck, and intimated that I take them outside, which I did, and then he began to bring out the sticks of this wood which I had seen inside; this wood appeared to be the ordinary sort of wood known as "hard cord wood" and such as is sold in the cities by the farmers to be sawed, and split for stove purposes, but it was terribly dry, and exceedingly hard, as I found out.

I now put one of these sticks on the buck and began trying to saw it, while the young man threw out the rest of it, till there was quite a pile of it, and as soon as I started to try to saw some of it, I discovered at once what an awful hard job I had on my hands; the wood was as hard as bone, and very dry, like it had lain there in this dry place for a great many years, and too, the saw was in an awful condition it was not only dull, but many of the teeth were bent, and many were broken off, and being so fearfully tired, I was in despair.

But I realized that I must saw that wood, so I looked the saw over, and tried to think what I would do, and it ran through

APPENDIX

my mind, that these people must be heedless, ignorant, and unsympathetic, to expect anyone to work honestly under such conditions; but I found a stone, and I pounded the teeth of the saw into shape till I could use it, for I intended to be honest, and to work, and to do the work given to me if I possibly could, but how tedious it was, and the saw would cut only indifferently, and I had to try to remedy it continually, so that it would cut at all, but I saw that I must work hard and fast, if I would finish the job before evening, and I reasoned that it would be useless for me to complain to the store, as they would know nothing, nor care, and I should only be laughed at, and possibly insulted, and perhaps called a lazy tramp; so, though tired enough to fall down I worked away at the wood, sawing slowly stick by stick, and wondering in a dazed way, if I would ever get through with it all; but as I would saw a stick, and would go to get another, I thought I noticed that the pile that I had to saw, looked very much smaller, as though I had sawed more than I really thought and also the sawed lot appeared larger to me, and this gave me courage, though I wondered at it, and so I worked on and on, till at last, after I had worked a very long time, I noted that I was picking up my last stick, and so, slowly and with joy I finished it, and then I laid down my saw, and was glad to think that I had finished the job, and was making up my mind what I would do next, when the back door opened a little, and a hand thrust out an axe; I had not thought to split it, but I reasoned that of course it was necessary, and so I picked up a stick, and set it up so as to split it; now, as I saw, and took up this axe, I noticed that it was a very beautifully decorated affair, the handle was covered with gold leaf, and the blade was all silvered over; I thought, this is an advertising, or show axe, that has been on exhibition, and undoubtedly they have sent and got it in a hurry for me, but I lifted it, it was as heavy

as though made of all metal, I wondered at all this, but had no time to question it, so I picked up this very heavy axe and made a stroke at a hard stick of wood, that I had set on end, when to my amazement, the edge of the axe was turned over like a piece of putty; as soon as I saw this, I wondered what all this could mean, they must know that this axe was bad, and not fit for the purpose; I had made the saw do the work, but I knew at once that I was going to do nothing with this axe, and I was in a state of perplexity; well while I was deep in my study of this problem, I heard a laugh, and on looking up, I saw the elderly man, the woman, and the young man, all looking out of the window above me, and laughing pleasantly at me, as they saw me in my dilemma, but they drew their heads in immediately, and then the young man came down at once, and asked what the matter was, and I told him, and then he said "you have done enough, you take the axe and come with me", and so we went upstairs, and the elderly man received me pleasantly, and said "well, so you sawed the wood? I hardly thought you would do it, you know that I have had that wood for a very long time on purpose to try men who wanted to work, but none of them have ever tried to do the job, I knew the condition of the saw, and the hard proposition it was to saw that wood, and so I arranged a reward for the man who really wanted to work, and would do it; this axe is not lead as you suppose, the handle is real solid gold, and the blade is solid silver, and it is yours," but, I said, in astonishment, "what can I do with this?" I know that it is very valuable, but how can I use it in any way? I need food and rest;" so he said, "you may come with me"; and now as we passed through the store, after bidding good day to the woman and young man who stood smilingly by, as the elderly man talked with me, and I noticed that at this time it was near closing time for the store, and that all of the clerks were

APPENDIX

getting ready to go out, and too, now, they all kept their eyes on me and the man with me, as though I must be of great importance, to be with him and to have him take notice of me, I saw too, that all noticed that I had the axe, and then I realized that they all knew the history of it, and I felt that I was looked upon as a hero, but I really felt that I was only a poor, tired, hungry, tramp, and that I had done nothing but an honest job of very hard work, that anyone might have done with a little patience, and with this we passed out of the store, and down the steps, and as we passed along the street, my guide talked to me as we went, and he told me that he was very glad that he had found a man who was willing to work; and then he said, "I am now going to the bank that furnished that axe, and I will tell them that it is yours, and you can get money on it if you want to, and bye and bye you can redeem it, and so, saying this, we entered the bank across the street nearly opposite the store, and the cashier seeing us, laughed, and said, "well, so you have found your man at last," and my guide said, "yes," and then he told him his story and bidding me good-day, left me, while I talked with the cashier about the axe and he very kindly made arrangements with me, so that I could get money enough for my present needs.

I will say, that at the time that I dreamed this dream, I was in a state of deep depression, I was dejected and miserable, either because of my own fault, or through misfortune, everything seemed to be against me, and I felt that the whole world was against me, and that my life was a useless grind of senseless misery and trouble, and so in a crude way, I took my troubles to God, and told Him about them, and this dream followed, that night.

INTERPRETATION

At the time of this dream, I did not know what it meant, and would not have been able to interpret it, but I thought I

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

saw encouragement in it, although everything seemed so dark, and at the time I was fast losing all my interest in the truth and God, that I had had, and the world seemed to be using me for a football. I was getting no satisfaction, and I seemed to be the plaything of chance; I realize now, that a good deal of my trouble was my own fault, but I was weak, slow, and childish, and to a very great extent I let conditions have their way with me, rather than fight, for I hated a row, and to be in a squabble all of the time, so as the world had no use for a molly-coddle, I got used rough, but in and through it all, God watched me, and saw the future, and He held out a hope that if I would use my brains, think, reason, and dig for the truth, that I should find it, and that He, the earth, and His word would help me. I did not see all of this then, but I intuitively felt that there was encouragement in connection with this dream, that is, if I persevered in patience, and at this time (1914) I have found this to be so; subsequent to this dream, I passed through some very dark days, and many, many a time when I have wondered whether or not it were best for me to end it all by death in my deep moments of troubled thought, I would come to myself to remember that while I was thinking, that I thought I had seen a large, strong, human hand, held down to me, from above through the clouds, darkness, and gloom, as though it were to be taken by me, to lead and guide me; I learned afterward, that when this vision came, to give my whole soul up to God, and forget self, and trouble, and many times when I have seen that hand, in my troubles, I would take new courage in my weak way, and plod on, thinking perhaps that a new and a brighter condition would arise in the future for me.

But it meant more than encouragement, as I have since found out, it was foreseen, and foreknown that the time would come when I should very seriously apply for work, to God, and

APPENDIX

that a peculiar and difficult work would be given to me, and that I should fully accomplish it under great difficulties.

A DREAM

In 1902 I think, I had a remarkable dream, I believe that I have a record of it somewhere, though I cannot tell where, but as far as I can remember it was this.

I am employed as the manager of a working force in erecting a large open structure, necessitating a very great number of immense timbers of various shapes in its construction; I am furnished with blue prints of this structure, and also of each and every part, every single detail has been most fully and completely worked out, and each and every timber is completely finished away from the place of erection, and all are sent to me marked, and the same marks are on the prints, and the prints are also explanatory, and these tell me just how this great framework should go together, what timbers should be erected first, and just where they should go; every detail is worked out absolutely to a finish, these prints tell me how to arrange, and put together, all these different timbers, which to take first, where it goes, and so on with each one till the end.

Well, I had a force of workmen, and we had worked for a long time, when, as we neared the end, and only one enormous timber remained to go into this structure to complete it, we found that we had come to a complete block in the work; we had completed the structure, all but this one big, long, and very heavy timber, and now this must go to the very top, and it would hold and fasten all of the rest securely, and it was absolutely necessary, but we could not get it there, because in order to do so, it appeared to us that many of the other timbers would have to be removed first, but if this was done, they could not afterward go back into place, and so it appeared to us as if a great blunder

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

had been made somewhere, and it appeared, on the face of it, as though it was the fault of the designer.

This condition had existed for quite a length of time now, and I was at work day and night, trying to solve the problem, and I couldn't.

Well, the men waited, and they had already begun to get impatient, and looked to me to do something. I was stuck, but I would not give in.

I intuitively had absolute faith in the designer, whoever he was, because of the wonderful completeness with which it had all been carried out so far, though, strange to say, I had never seen this person, nor did I seem to know where he was, or how to get to him, and so I, as manager, found myself in this awful predicament, but his work, so far as we had gone was simply perfect, and so I really blamed myself more than anyone else for this trouble, though how and where it was I could not tell, and so I would not give in, and say that it was his fault, till I was sure that it was his fault; I felt that I was wrong, but where; I went over the drawings again and again, and I followed the work that we had done, step by step, to where we were, and then I thought and studied with my whole heart, and then I went over the drawings again, and then went to the building and studied it again and again, to see if I could not possibly unravel this great mystery, for I felt that it was up to me to do it, and that I must do it.

Well, on my way back from visiting this structure, and after I had, as I felt, gone over the prints for the last time, I seemed to feel that I had done all that I could do, but, Oh; I thought, if I could only see the engineer for just a moment, how quickly it would all be made plain; Oh, if I could only see him; my very soul seemed to cry out in longing, I couldn't make it

APPENDIX

all out, I did not believe that the plan was all wrong, and I could not see any mistake that I had made, so I felt that I was baffled; and so, now again I thought, in my awful despair, Oh, if I could only see the designer, and with this went out my whole soul in an awful yearning and dumb cry for help, and I was so absorbed in this that I did not see anyone nearby, till a person appeared just coming toward me who was a stranger to me. I scarcely noticed this man, as I was so absorbed in wanting to see my unknown employer, and to have a talk with him, when I knew that it would all be made plain; but this stranger now spoke to me, he seemed to be a person of intelligence, and he enquired about the work, and as he appeared very interested in it, I told him that I was in very great trouble, and then he wanted to know just what the matter was, and I told him, and then he said, "tell me just what the matter is, I am the designer, and I may be able to help you."

Oh, how glad I was, I could have shouted for joy, at this exceptional opportune meeting. I now intuitively felt that all my trouble was over, and I said, we have, in our work, done exactly as we were advised by the drawings, and something is wrong, we cannot get this last great timber in place, and I cannot find out where we have done wrong.

So he looked at me kindly, and said, "your work is all right, you have done as you were told, and the conditions are as they should be, but there is a condition here that you do not understand, I knew of all this, I anticipated it, and so I came to tell you, so you are to have no fear; you go and call your men at once in the usual way, and tell them to get to work at once, get all of the hoisting apparatus ready, and then get hold of this last piece, make everything fast, and when everything is ready, you simply tell them to hoist away, and what appears to you now to be obstacles in the way, will all at once disappear, you

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

will not understand it, but you will see it done," and with this he disappeared.

Now, the men had seen me talking with this man, and they surmised that I was getting to find out something, so now they gathered about me, as I called them, and I told them that the great mystery had been solved, and then I told them to get ready quickly, and make everything fast, as we had often done before, and that, when this was done, that I would tell them what to do; so now the men did not question me, they had all confidence in me, even if they could not see how, as yet, I was to accomplish this great feat, so they did as I told them, and then, when I was told that everything was ready, I said, now all of you lift at once, never mind what you think, or what seems obstacles to you, just lift in the usual way, with all of your strength, and everyone be prepared to drop this great beam in place as soon as it is there; so they began to lift, and as they lifted, in some mysterious way, all of the obstacles that had appeared to me before, now seemed to disappear, a clear way opened up, and up, up, this great timber went, and almost before we knew it, it went into its place with a snap, and up went a terrific shout of joy from the men, and again as I looked, all of the former structure had again resumed its original condition as at first, and I could not see the path by which we had taken this last timber to its position, and I still wondered how it had been accomplished, I could not understand it, but it was done, and how glad we all were.

INTERPRETATION

Looking back now from 1914, I see a wonderful difference in my dreams; at the time of this dream, and previous to it, all of my dreams looked forward into the future, sometimes a long way, now, today they are almost at once realized, but at the same

APPENDIX

time the whole meaning of the real interpretation may not yet be fulfilled, or, for some time to come.

Now, this dream looks forward a long while, to a time, when, by thought and reason (my workmen) I acquire a nearly completely built true mental-spiritual ability, preintended, for a certain work (the unfinished structure) as intended, and then accepted of God.

But the time will surely come, when I shall see that with all of this I shall need more, and I must have absolute faith in God, and trust Him to the limit, for I am to reach a place, where He, and He only can help me, as I am to have a certain complicated work given me to do, but it cannot be finished without superior preintended aid; and so my faith and trust must be of sufficient strength to produce a want or desire, that will bring Him to help me; my later dreams and the interpretations, will show what this is to be and how I cannot possibly do without it.

It is well to note here, that the interpretation of these dreams occurring at about this date (1902) were not understood, or interpreted till about 1914, except partially; also that, in interpreting all true dreams, they are to be understood, as being possible, probably will take place, and containing advice, or command, depending entirely upon the individual, to whom they are sent.

A DREAM

In 1903, I think, I had this remarkable dream, and later also some incidents connected with it.

I was living in New Jersey at that time, and had begun to take more or less interest in dreams; I did not understand them, but I thought about them; now, at this time, I had reason to be anxious about my mother's welfare, and in thinking of her, I asked in prayer of God to give me work, and at the same

time allow her to live to see me engaged in it, that her efforts in my early life, might not appear to her to have been wasted; at this time I was very anxious for God to give me work, and to send me forth of His own accord, and with power, that I might know that I was doing right, and doing his will; now, with this I went to bed, and to sleep and dreamed that I was at work in front of father's house, in Berwick, Maine, on the South Berwick road, on a summer's day, on a stationary engine; when as I looked up, a very elderly man came by me, and went into the addition, or kitchen of the house; at the same time I followed him, as I desired to see what he wanted; he entered, and sat down, and produced a book (I thought that it might be a Bible, as it looked like one, and that he might be selling them, or giving them away, if he found anyone that needed one) and he said, after I had intimated that I would like to know about the book, what it was, the price, and other details concerning it, "I am going to let you have this book WHEN YOU KNOW IT, when you have learned it, and taught it, I will give it to you, and it shall be yours to keep, but you will have to preach, or teach for a number of times first, and I will loan it to you till then" (I have forgotten the number of times), with this he got up and went out, and I thought that he somehow very much resembled my father, so much so, that I pondered it for a good while in my dream; now, my mother was in the room, at this time, in the dream, and witnessed, and heard all that was said; almost immediately after he had placed the book in my hands (and the name of the book seemed to be called THE BOOK OF LIFE), and just as he had started to go, and as my mother turned to go into the inner, or sitting room, a most beautiful WOMAN, appeared, as coming down the stairs from above, which led into this room, and entered this room; I had never seen her before, I was not exactly

APPENDIX

expecting her, though when she appeared, I seemed to know that she had been upstairs, and that I had waited for her for a long time, and when I saw her, I felt rather reproachful toward her, for being so late, for it seemed to me, that it was now late in the afternoon, and late in the day for her to be getting up, and now I thought, at last she has concluded to come down to me; I seemed to have it fixed in my mind, that this was my legal wife, a woman to whom I had been married, but had never seen, but had waited so long for; the man noticed her in silent recognition, as belonging to the place and conditions, and my mother regarded her silently as being doubtfully hopeful that she might fulfill what might be required of her, and with this I seemed to think that she was to bring happiness and joy, where was now sorrow and pain; and I seemed to feel that it was a pity for her to come to such uncongenial conditions; and, too, I conceived that she was somehow a divine power that I had been waiting for to come to me, to aid me in Christian work, in which I wished very soon to be engaged; and while I thought that it was too bad for her to have to come down, and go to work with me in the dirty, dark, wicked and cruel places which I knew, yet I felt that the humanity was worth it, and that, though beautiful as she was, it was my duty to accept her aid as the power given to me, to bring truth to man, and I somehow knew that she would do as I thought best; she was to be as a wife to me, bringing power and truth to me to use.

As soon as the man who had handed me the book, saw her, he at once got up and left, while my mother seemed very much perplexed, or rather, that it was a business of mine in which she had no part, and with this, the dream fades away.

I will now mention an incident in connection with this dream, that is very peculiar.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

In 1907, I think it was, I went to visit my mother in Berwick, and as we sat in the room, where this dream was laid, and without my ever having mentioned that I had ever had such a dream, she all at once asked me about it, and described the incidents in detail, concerning what had taken place, quite perfectly in every particular; I was much astonished, and I knew not what to say, and I did not tell her of my dream then, nor have I since, for I have been waiting to see what would come of it, but since then I think that I have studied it out.

INTERPRETATION

The interpretation of this dream is this, the man is the symbol of God the Father, the woman the spirit of truth in the earth.

My mother takes no part in it, but it is shown that she will witness the fulfillment of the dream, in the future.

The book is the origin, development, and destiny of Man, as the reason of the Creator, from the very beginning, to the end of time.

A certain, but indefinite time is to elapse, during which, I am to employ all my abilities to discover the whole plan of God, and know it, meanwhile, the spirit of truth being my aid; in the end, if this is accomplished, the power of truth, resulting from the knowledge gained, is to be granted to me.

This was not fully understood, until about 1914, as I seemed to begin to awake from a lethargic condition.

A DREAM

I dreamed a dream when in New Jersey, possibly in 1903, it was this: I dreamed that I was in some way in the habit of teaching or preaching in some place in a regular manner from time to

APPENDIX

time, and I noted the building well, and it seemed to me more like a schoolhouse; in my dream I seemed to realize that I had been here many times and that this time, in question, as I was coming from the place, after a meeting, I was conscious of an oppressive feeling, as though there was something wrong; I seemed to have no power, the people did not seem inclined to learn, nor could I teach them, they came to hear me but it did no good; and as I was about to leave the grounds, I noticed in a corner of the yard a RED HORSE, DEAD, lying on its side on the ground, I went up to it and looked it over thoroughly, I knew nothing about it, and so I supposed that someone's horse had wandered away, and had died there, and I supposed that they would soon come and take it away, but as I looked, I noticed that it was covered with FLIES, and these too were of just the same color as the horse, and too, they were all sitting in ROWS, just like people in church, or in a theatre, but seeing this, I simply took note of it, and then went off, and in a few minutes, as I was walking along towards my home, a person beckoned to me and I went into a house; the house seemed ordinary, and as I entered it I saw nothing strange; I entered into a large room, and here I seemed to see several people who were walking about, also, the room seemed to be more of a resting place, or lounging room, but my attention was attracted by a noise, as of water running, and I went to what seemed to me to be a big box, or covered receptacle, and I listened, and then I understood the meaning of the noise; inside of the box was a very large waterwheel, and an immense amount of water was pouring over it, as I knew by the noise, and this wheel was running at full speed, with the water making a terrific noise, and so I wondered what it was doing, and so I went entirely around this wheel, and discovered to my astonishment, that there was nothing

attached to it; I could plainly see the ends of the shaft that ran through the wheel, and it was doing no work; it was running uselessly, and all of this power was being wasted, and wondering why this was so, and noticing that some of those in the room were looking out of the window, I too looked out, and now I saw the FLUME that brought the water to the wheel; it seemed as though I could see miles away, as this flume ran away into the distance, till it was lost to view, running up, up, into the hills, to the very top of them; no one spoke to me, nor I to any of the others, and after noting all these things, I went out, and on my way, and the dream faded away.

The peculiar part of this dream is, that I did not remember it till about a year later as I was teaching a mission school outside of Pittsfield, Mass.

One Sunday, as I was leaving the schoolhouse with much the same feeling of oppression, because of ineffectual work, that I had had in this dream, and undoubtedly it was the arrangement of these same conditions, that caused me to remember the dream.

I remembered this dream, and that this place was, so it seemed to me, very like the place in my dream; thinking deeply over this, soon after, as I studied the dream, I arrived at the meaning of it, which I will now give.

INTERPRETATION

I consider this dream not only peculiar, but wonderful; at the time I dreamed this dream, I could not solve the problem of the conditions that were about me, and I was in a deep study over it all of the time, why it was that there was no power of truth amongst men, no power in the so-called churches, no power with the ministers and priests, the pew knew more,

APPENDIX

and had more power than the pulpit, all other powers of the world were having their way, and making noticeable and effectual progress, but the power of truth was standing still, and had been so for a long time, no one, generally speaking, to any great depth, seemed to pay attention to it, and so pondering this problem, I gave it up, and the dream that was intended to help me was not remembered, until about a year later, as I was trying to teach ; this same problem came up again about power, and then I remembered my dream, and so now pondering this, I was surprised to find, on thinking it out, that it was an answer to my problem then, now, and for all time.

I am here shown that the great force or power or truth (water) in the earth, is running to waste, as far as man is concerned ; this power is in the earth, brought to the earth from its very source, and made so that man could use for his own good, but he will not, he will not even notice it, or make an application of it, though it is better than anything that he has ; but, instead, he prefers to take his power from a human, earthly, and perishable source (the red horse) and from this source fill himself till he becomes as the power itself, a selfish, jealous, ugly, mean poisoned beast, fit for nothing but death itself, along with the power that made him thus.

A DREAM

Somewhere about 1890, I had the following dream ; I was a boy again, and at work, as I once did, in the carding room of a cotton mill ; it was in the evening after lighting up time, it was in the winter, and the daylight was short, the working day was long, making the dark mornings and evenings long and tedious ; I was tired, and wished that it was time to stop work, so I wandered over to the window and looked out, and I noted that it was very dark outside, but clear, and then as I looked

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

up I saw the stars shining, so I stood there watching them, when all at once they began to move, first one, then another, then many, and to swirl around, and some seemed to move out of their places, and others to drop, and soon I saw that the whole of the starry heaven was on the move, swirling, flying, and jumping in a variety of ways, and I was astonished at this, and thought that I must be seeing wrong, but I looked and looked again, then I looked around me in the room, and at familiar objects outside as far as I could see, and I saw that I was seeing all right, and then I looked up again, and the stars still appeared to be performing those peculiar gyrations, and as I gazed at the spectacle with astonishment, awe, and no little trepidation, I thought, why, this must be the coming end of the world, and the dream faded away.

INTERPRETATION

It is quite evident, that at the time, when I received this, as I was deeply interested in any teachings connected with the revelation of the future, concerning man and the earth, and whereas, it would be known that I would not understand this message at the time when it was given, its peculiarity would stay with me until later, when the true meaning would appear.

There is no doubt about the intention being, to show me that the time would come, when I, at work mechanically trying to do all that was required of me, and being tired of the long waiting in darkness and sin about me, should look up and see the power of God displayed about me, in an exceptional manner.

A DREAM

A few years ago, I have forgotten the date, though I think there is a record of it somewhere, I dreamed a dream, and this is it: I find myself wandering through a wilderness, then

APPENDIX

after a long time of journeying I am in a wood, then after another long period, I think I begin to hear sounds, as of human beings, as though I am near some dwellings, and I note evidences here and there, as though of the hand of man.

At this time, I have an intuitive feeling that I am on an island, although I have never seen any water, after another long period of wandering, I begin to hear sounds as though coming from a railroad, and after awhile I come to it; soon after a trolley car comes along and I board it, and I ride a long, long way, there were no other passengers, and no others were taken aboard, there was a conductor and trolley-man, and I was not approached for fares, neither did I expect to pay any, the car does not stop, and I ride through open country, across hills and valleys, and through forests, on, on and still on, till I wonder when it will stop; I am not bound for any destination that I know of, I am simply going to the end of the line; at last, poor and scattered habitations of man begin to appear, these grow better and more frequent, and then we appear to approach what seems to be a village, we go through this for some distance, and come to a stop near a central part, and I get off and walk about.

I am in a village, that is all inhabited by foreign speaking people, I think they may be Italian, Greek, or Portuguese, I cannot tell; I do not understand them nor they me, so I go for some distance, and for some time, trying to find a place where I can get food, and I want to find someone of my own language, but I find none, and so I finally enter a place that looks like a restaurant and make signs for food, as we cannot talk to each other, but they understand me and serve me, and are pleasant,, but they look at me as though I was someone very particular, and that they could not make me out, and I noted that the people in the place kept casting glances toward me,

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

and then would talk to each other as though trying to discover who and what I was; however, I eat and rest, and then I go on after paying these people in money that I do not understand, but which they say is right, and then they laugh at me in a friendly way, which leads me to think, that they believe that I am more or less simple.

I now go out of the village, after some considerable walking, toward the west, as I think, into the country, and very soon into a bleak sandy, dreary waste, a desert; it appeared as though it might be a sandy waste not far from the sea, but I saw no water, I was amongst the hills of sand, I journey for a very long time, following a very faint trail, and I become very weary watching to see any signs of the appearing of the end of the road, though I know not whither I am going, so I keep on, till my road begins to veer off a little to the right, and soon it makes a sharp turn to the right, and goes up a high hill, and this I follow, and start climbing the hill, and very slowly up I go, and still a sandy desert, sand, sand, nothing but sand everywhere; after a while I discover a few bits of stone; stone chips that have been hewn off, evidently by some workman, these are beside the road, on and on I go and now these bits of stone have become more and more plenty, and too, I notice now that they are in small bunches or piles by the wayside, and I examine them and come to the conclusion that this is evidence of the work of some one who has been building; but what and where?

Who would build in this dreary waste, and what for, especially a stone structure; so I wonder and keep on, and soon the heaps of stone chips by the wayside have become great mounds, and everywhere, in all directions, nothing but these great heaps of stone chips, where blocks of stone have been hewn out; but where can the building be, and what is it, I ask

myself, and on, and on I go, and now I am getting near to the top of the hill that I am climbing, and so on I go with these ever increasing piles of stone around me on every hand, till I arrive at the top.

This is flat, I go farther, and begin to see that farther on, it begins to slope down, and as I near the farther side, I begin to see the top of a very great stone building, and so now I see the reason of all these piles of stone chips.

A little later, as I get to the brow of the hill, and I look down to the lower level, there beside a great body of water, stands the most magnificent building that I have ever seen; pure white marble, and as clean and pure as though it were being washed completely and continually inside and out by the ocean, it was so clean that it amazed me; I went down the hill and approached it, wondering what it was, the architecture appeared to me to be complete, and perfect, and Oh, so beautiful.

I neared it, the great front doors stood open, I saw no other person near or about it, and so I peeped in to see a most beautiful interior; I wanted to enter, and would have asked to do so, but I saw no one, so I entered through the door, and found myself standing in a central room, around which were many others, and I wondered what this building could be, and why no one was there, and why this was built all alone out on this dreary waste beside the water.

And so I looked about a little, but presently I thought I heard voices, and so I listened, and I certainly did, and now these voices came nearer, and then presently those who were talking, came into this same room, on the farther side from me; as the room was very large their voices sounded far away, and they seemed small. Thinking that I might not be wanted in the

place, I would have gone, but one came to me, having seen me, and spoke to me.

I was about to make inquiries concerning this building, when he said, "this is a beautiful building, how do you like it?" and then before I could speak, he asked, "is it as you wish, as you expected it to be, does it suit you? This is yours you know;" now, there were others there, and they were now near, and were listening to what was being said, they simply looked pleasant and smiled, but said nothing; I was so stunned and amazed at the words of my companion, that I could scarcely speak, but seeing that he expected some sort of an answer, I looked at him and said, ME? I ORDER THIS? MINE? Why, I don't know enough, I don't understand, I have had nothing to do with this, I couldn't; I couldn't order a beautiful building like this built, I know nothing about it, but I looked at my companion, and I saw that he was in earnest, and serious, and then I began to think; HE MUST KNOW, HE MUST BE RIGHT, and I must be wrong, but how, where, and when did I ever do a thing like this, and as I wondered the dream faded away.

INTERPRETATION

This dream is to show me the real building of character, and how it is done, and the result, looking at it from God's standpoint.

The life-journey of a man is here shown as a single human individual, travelling alone, and in order to reach the right end of his journey, at the right time, he is looked upon by the world in general, as simple, a stranger, and of unknown tongue, unconsciously he builds all the while, and if he persists in finishing his journey along the way laid out for him, he will find in the end, that he has built a character recognized

of God as pure, complete, and clean, and in this character, the most beautiful of all things or conditions, will reside God, His Word, and the Spirit of Truth.

A DREAM

I find myself in a strange place, everything about me is strange, and I am very hungry, so I go to a large public restaurant, and demand a meal; the proprietor comes to me in a very mean and ugly manner, and asks, "what are you to pay for a meal with?" and, "how are you to pay?" in a very mean and insinuating way; I did not care so much that he refused me, though I was at a loss to see why, but many who were near by noted the incident, and it made me mad, so I told him what a contemptible wretch I thought him to be, more especially as he had been so insulting, and had tried to disgrace and degrade me before these others, and then I showed him how well able I was to pay for all that I had asked for, and showed him a goodly amount of money that I had about me.

He appeared a little disconcerted at this, but I left him, and went and found another place; I thought that my personal appearance was all that it needed to be, but, I thought, perhaps these people do no want me to appear in their midst in public, and so going to a rear or back door, the kitchen perhaps, I asked for a meal, from a mean and slatternly looking woman, who appeared in answer to my knock, she looked at me uninvitingly, and gave me nothing, but signified rather pompously and suspiciously to follow her, which I did, passing through what seemed to me several rooms and corridors, and through many doors; then I found myself in a large room, seemingly, and was turned over to a man of austere and serious, though benign countenance, and who seemed to be the highest authority in the place; he looked at me, but said nothing about

giving me anything to eat, but pointing me to a table or bench, intimated that I sit down and commence work on a peculiar piece of formed metal, I assumed it to be an iron casting, and I seemed to see that it needed to have something done to it to prepare it for use, or for what it was intended, and I seemed to realize just what was needed to be done to complete it, and so with a few tools I immediately set to work. The man gave me no instructions, save to intimate that I was to do what was needed, and I wondered at this in my dream.

And now as I worked, I noticed that there seemed to be many other people in this room, but they seemed to be a very long way off, and in the shadows and recesses far away, I could not see them distinctly, and I tried to see if they were eating, but I could not make out, but I thought not, they seemed to be engaged in talking to one another, none paid any attention to me, nor were they near the one who had set me at work.

I now noticed as I glanced about me, that without my realizing it, I had been brought aboard a ship, and this rather surprised me, and to make sure I glanced out through what seemed to be windows on the opposite side of the room to that where I had entered, and I discovered at once the rocking motion of the vessel, and so tried to make out, and to understand how it was, that I had come aboard without knowing it; the woman had immediately disappeared, and the way I had come seemed a very long way off, and crooked, so I gave it up, but I believed the ship to be at anchor, near the shore, awaiting the time and conditions for sailing, all of which were unknown and strange to me, though it did pass through my mind that the finishing of the work I had to do, might mean the time of the sailing of the ship.

APPENDIX

INTERPRETATION

I am shown here, that from Man, as a human being, though I am ready and willing to pay for it, I am to get nothing that I am after, simply because Man has nothing to give, but he will not acknowledge this; he tries to cover this deficiency or lack, and to bluff it out even to being insulting and mean toward an inquirer or seeker after the truth, when occasion requires.

I now turn to the other side of humanity, the woman, and she gives me nothing; these two stand as the representatives of the human family.

Through these, Nature leads me to the Creator Himself, and this Creator, Sustainer, and Director of all things, He, for food, gives me a mechanical work such as I understand, to do, while He furnishes the material; this mechanical work is the process of thought, and possibly spoken or written, and the material that He furnishes, is His word or law, which may be understood by thought and reasoning, and this work is the food which I am after, the real food or truth.

I work a mechanical problem, discovering His word, as I go along the pathway of life, and this is the real food and life; it is quite likely, that there may be connected with this, a very special work, which I am to do, the which, when finished, will mean the beginning of new conditions.

The ship is a condition in which this Being and myself occupy a place amongst men (the water), and our relationship is shown by the existence of others, who are aboard this same ship, but who are waiting for certain conditions to transpire, it is quite likely that these represent others who in the past did, and finished a work similar to that which I am now at work on, when I shall have finished my work, I shall then be at

liberty to join them, and the time of the departure of this vessel will be at hand, the work assigned me may be the last that is waiting to be finished.

This ship is anchored, that is, this condition is awaiting a certain fulfillment of time, when into this condition will come a new crisis, a new movement (the sailing), then he who is near and knows the whole plan of God, will be able to instruct, and lead those who are not as near, but who would like to be the children of God.

This dream is a direct answer, that I am to understand, that I am getting my results from my thoughts and reasonings, directly from God.

DREAMS OF OTHERS

A party dreamed that he stood on the shore of a great body of water; it was calm, save the small ripples on its surface, and on these the light of the sun played, and the rays that were shot out from these ripples, were like arrows of gold and silver, it was exquisitely beautiful, and the party stood entranced, and amazed by it, and he admired and wondered at it, and at its being so magnificent and beautiful, and as he stood there and gazed upon it, he was lost in contemplation of it and completely carried away by this beautiful picture.

INTERPRETATION

This party is here shown that his whole mind and being is taken possession of by the works of Man, his whole soul is absorbed by the offerings of the world; while he has an ordinary respect for the Creator, his whole attention is given to the satisfying himself with what he can get out of the earth, there is within him a subconscious element, that makes itself

APPENDIX

known, at times, above the din of worldly interests, and this causes momentary uneasiness and suspicion that the life is not all that it ought to be, he is of an inquisitive turn of mind, and a mechanic, hence his attention in being drawn to the significance of dreams, but the works of Man, as a whole, as he sees them, are to him a superior source of interest to his ambition, and in thus interesting himself, he relegates God to a mere thing, or condition, or shuts Him out altogether, but the dream shows conclusively that there are superior powers about him, fully knowing his personal and private life, who are doing all that they possibly can to help him to a better understanding of the truth.

DREAMS OF OTHERS

This party dreams that he goes to see his brother, and that this brother is in their father's house, living there, and that it belongs to his brother, and this party, in his dream, realizes all this and that it is all right.

He is well acquainted with the old homestead, and the house with all of its rooms, and he notes that his brother has been making a great many improvements in the house, but more especially in one room, and here he has made a great improvement by placing a skylight above it so as to flood the room with light, and too, he sees that this room has been ornamented, and fitted up splendidly, making a very beautiful room out of it.

This party thinks that this one room is very beautiful, with its wonderful ornamentation, and the light flooding it, and he is most pleased with it.

This party talks with his brother, and his brother tells him that he is troubled terribly with thieves, they do not come to the house, but to the barn, and so this party says that he

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

will help his brother to get rid of these thieves, and so he makes arrangements with a policeman, and during some of these depredations, he with the policeman capture these marauders and confine them.

INTERPRETATION

This dream is peculiar, in that it shows how careful those are who show these pictures to us, in their watch over us at all times, from the cradle to the grave, to bring to our notice anything that may be made use of to bring us to see and acknowledge the truth.

This dream shows this man to be truthfully inclined, but not especially so, it is brought to his notice that a fellow man has discovered the source of truth, and opened a way, that it may enter his being, and at the same time, this fellow man has wrought many changes in his own life, the which, when the visitor notes them, thinks them beautiful.

It appears from the dream, that the time is coming, when this party will have come to firmer decisions concerning the truth, and its source, and will try to protect it in others, at last, from assaults of evil, in underhanded, or round-about ways, by the use of lawful and legal methods, but it is nowhere shown, that at any time in the future, this party would stand absolutely for the truth in himself.

AS SCIENCE VIEWS DREAMS

Almost all scientific observers agree that the materials of which dreams are made are memories of past experiences of the individual. Curiously enough the memories that occur most frequently are those of the previous day and those of early childhood.

APPENDIX

In many cases where the incident of a dream seems to be entirely unfamiliar it has been shown by careful investigation that they correspond to actually experienced events that have escaped the memory of the waking self. Delboeuf records an interesting example of this.

In 1862 he dreamed that he found two lizards in the snow. He took them up, warmed them and placed them in a hole in a wall, together with a small fern, which he knew they liked to eat. The name of the fern seemed in his dream to be *Asplentum ruta muralis*.

On awakening he could not remember ever to have heard the name of the fern of his dream; although he discovered that a fern called *Asplentum ruta Muraria* really existed. Sixteen years later, however, he happened to be turning over the pages of a friend's album of dried flowers, and to his surprise came across the very fern, with the Latin name written underneath in his own handwriting.—Chicago Inter Ocean.

INTERPRETATION

In reviewing this dream, and interpreting it, I would say that cold, bloodless, unsympathetic, ungodly, purely worldly scientific theory, does not interpret dreams, neither has curiosity ever interpreted them nor ever will, the man next to God, though simple, may do so, in a rational scientific manner, or he who would find God and the truth, may find answers to inquiries in dreams, but the curious find only chaff.

The real facts existing within this dream are, first, it was sent as a warning, it appears as though, through ignorance of its meaning, he rejected the warning, and fastened his mind on a special sort of fern rediscovered in his dream.

The snow represents the very essence of purity and truth in the earth, and he saw, knew, and realized, that this spirit

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

of truth, the power of the Infinite, was all about him in Nature, this may have been in a measure subconscious, but he knew it, even if he did not heed its influence.

The lizards represent evil in the earth, and this evil is found closely associated with truth, but near to death, and apparently would have died, if left alone, by reason of the truth, but he is shown, that he in his ignorance, takes pity on the evil as he finds it in a nearly helpless condition, and nourishes it back to strength and life, by means of his knowledge of exceptional or rare effort.

The real private or personal reason of this warning, is not apparent, but it is most probable that there was something connected with this man's life, that was antagonistic to the truth, some selfish principle, that he was fostering, that would ultimately mean his ruin.

HUXLEY AND HIS STRANGE DREAM

By Rev. Thomas B. Gregory

The great English scientist saw more things and greater things with his mind's eye than he did with the eye of flesh. Looking into the quivering structure of the jellyfish he saw therein the foundations of modern biology. He gazed on the horse upon which he took his daily exercise and in the distant background of the early Eocene he saw its strange ancestor with its five hoofs on each leg.

He bent over the tiny bit of protoplasm and in it there was revealed to him the grand procession of Life, from Ameba of the primeval sea to Plato, Shakespeare and Washington.

But all this is as nothing in comparison with another vision that came to Huxley—the influence of which abided with him to the end. He had a dream, and in the dream he saw himself dedicated to Truth.

APPENDIX

A stern yet kindly voice said to him, “Thomas Huxley, you are to maintain your intellectual honesty and self-respect; and no matter what comes, you are never to lend yourself to the cause that does not seem to you to be backed by the evidence of facts.”

To the voice he answered: “While I live my motto shall be, truth for truth’s own sake. I will regard the value of authority as being neither greater nor less than what it can prove itself to be worth. I will smite all humbugs, however big. I will tolerate everything but lying.”

And he kept his word.

When he lost his beautiful little boy Noel, the good Charles Kingsley wrote him a sympathetic letter, in which he took occasion to refer to certain beliefs and to inquire if he entertained the same. Replying, Huxley said:

“If wife and child, and name and fame were all lost to me one after another, still I would not lie. The longer I live the more obvious it is to me that the most sacred act of a man’s life is to say and to feel, ‘I believe such and such to be true.’ All the greatest rewards and all the heaviest penalties of existence cling about that act.”

Finding no word in the books to properly express his position, he coined the word “Agnostic”—from the Greek “*ag*” (not) and “*gnosis*” (knowing), meaning not knowing.

“I do not know,” he would say to those who asked him about the things of which he had no knowledge. Was it a question in Political Economy or Science, or Theology—it made no difference, his reply was ever the same, “I do not know.”

And so Huxley lived and died—true to his beautiful dream, always searching for the Truth, always loving the Truth when he found it.

INTERPRETATION

In regard to this dream of Huxley's, I would say, that had he followed what he intuitively knew to be the real truth of all things, as he must have known it, and must have found it in his researches, he would truly have been a great man.

For some reason, selfish or otherwise, he did not adhere to the truth, a stick or a stone, that could be weighed, measured and analyzed, were of more importance to him, than a faith in a supreme power that created it, and Huxley could see and know that power, and the truth of it, in everything around him, and within him, but he denied it, and refused to do the bidding of this great power, that was warning him against his liability to do this same thing.

Huxley was no fool, but his education consisted in knowing nothing most intensely, and against his real, sane and better judgment.

In other words, despite all that has been said to the contrary, he followed a lie, and he knew it.

I make this assertion, because I know that in the life of every normal human being, there is a subconscious element, that will assert itself at every opportunity, and very quickly point out to a man that his own ideals, no matter how high they may be, are not supreme. Man did not create himself, he realizes this fully, although he may lie about it, both to himself and to others.

PRAYER AND FASTING

These are mentioned so often in the New Testament, and especially in the teachings of Jesus, and as they have come down to us through these 2000 years, and are still exercising a mysterious influence, as they help form the basis of the re-

APPENDIX

ligions of the world, especially the Christian Religion, I think it necessary to say a few words here concerning them.

Both Prayer and Fasting, as used by Jesus in His teaching, was intended to be symbolical terms, the word Fast meaning to WANT or DESIRE, and the word Prayer standing as the symbol of the EFFORT or WORK put forth to satisfy this desire; a misconstruction has been placed upon these words, and we have lost sight of the meaning of them, because of the fact that Man is supposed to want or desire only one thing, and that is, to get back to God, and will seek and use any means that will enable him to do so, this is the only thing worth knowing; it is all Jesus taught, and it is all that the Whole Spirit of Truth is teaching today.

But Man wants other things; he forgets God, and sets his heart on selfish acquirements, hence the African talks to his idol, to him impersonating an ideal god who will favor his schemes, the Brahman, Confucian, and Mohammedan are the same, the iconoclast of Russia is no whit different from his contemporary of the western hemisphere, who bows before the cross, impersonating, to him, a Christ who will further his own selfish and worldly interests, and connected with all this is a lot of one-sided conversation, called prayer; viewed aright, the whole matter discovers itself to be selfish, hypocritical, and foolish.

As the first element that a human being, or in fact any living creation exercises, is want or desire, known or unknown, for material food, so it should be that the normal reasoning human being should want or desire God, this is what the symbol fasting stands for.

To seek the way, by means of the revealed truths, is to use all the spiritual, mental, and physical abilities to accomplish this, and this effort is what prayer as a symbol stands for.

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE THROUGH CREATION

It does not do any hurt to talk to God, or the Savior, if one has anything to say, in so called prayer, as it is an outlet for the feelings, emotions, desires, and determinations, but it is vastly better not to enter the presence of God, unless one has first done as he has been told, and has some sincere message or plea, and to say but little, but to let the Father or the Savior do the talking, and for the human being to listen.

There is no language but what is fully understood in the realm of truth, even before it is spoken, and all conditions have been arranged for, long before the person knows it himself.

The method of howling to God, because the stock in Wall st. has gone up or down, or because the season is wet and the potatoes rot; or of tabooing certain articles of diet, on certain days, believing thereby, that God is overjoyed at such a transaction, is as pernicious, as it is hypocritical.

JOHN 2, 4TH AND 5TH VERSES

I wish, in this, my last, to draw a brief sketch in connection with this reference.

My reason for doing so, is because I wish to try to show the value that Jesus placed on the privilege of returning to God, as offered by Him.

Of course we know, as we have followed Jesus from His birth, at His baptism, and during His temptation, that His determination is fixed, but there is a new picture presented here, not often noticed, because of its brevity in language.

It is beyond dispute, that Mary was the choice of God, from her birth, to be the mother of Jesus.

A woman, intuitively filled with an almost superhuman longing to get back to God, she is astounded at the summons to become the mother of the world's Deliverer; she passes

APPENDIX

through the early scenes, scarcely realizing the importance of this great transaction, in which she was taking part.

The years pass, the child grows, across her vision, from time to time, flashes pictures, produced by the study of the Scriptures, as He was being taught, until she begins to discern the pathway into the future, more so perhaps through His keen perception of the meaning of the prophecies, and ceremonial law, and the part that these were to play in His life.

So He arrives at manhood, they both realize the awfulness of the situation, in which they are now the principal actors.

As the baptism, and the temptation passed, she noted with ever increasing dread, these steps, as they were taken, for she had already learned that this road led direct to an end, of which, she scarcely dared to think.

Jesus chose His disciples, and began teaching them, while the mother filled with a fearful dread, mingled with an intense longing, waited for the unfolding of events, which both knew were at hand, and would take place as soon as the time appeared, and all was ready.

It is thus that we approach the incident as recorded by John.

It is probable that both knew what was to take place, but they did not know just when it would occur, for there is no doubt that it had already been revealed to Jesus, that as He would be the Savior, so He, as the accepted truth, must become sin, and as such, He must publicly declare His intentions, and in such a way, as that there might be no retreat, and the incident here recorded, in connection with this marriage event, that of turning the water into wine, was undoubtedly pre-determined, and made known to Him by the Father, and so too Mary had knowledge of what was near, and about to take place, but not of the exact time.

When it became known that more wine was needed, the situation was comprehended at once by Mary, and undoubtedly by Jesus as well, but He says nothing, it is the mother who speaks first, and it is the few words now spoken by these two, that we have in the record, that reveals to us the inner life of mother and son.

In understanding, the mother sees the outline of the future of Jesus, as the Sacrifice; there is no alternative, the great public avowal must be made now, absolutely by faith, and there is only one way, straight forward to the altar.

The mother heart is rent in anguish, and worst of all, it seemed to her, she must be the one to advise Him, this shows the awful test of her fidelity to the truth.

The Creator knew that in His choice she would not falter, or fail Him, and she does not; the effort put forth is almost superhuman, and the price to be paid, is above value, but with a power born of the spirit of truth within, she makes the awful announcement, to Jesus, that she knows will lead to the great and final transaction.

Apparently, Jesus had not noticed, undoubtedly He had, and knew all, and even more than His mother did, for He was waiting in awful suspense, as His words show, at the announcement of His mother; this terrible silence and suspense is broken by Jesus, and the first words uttered are from an overwrought mind, driven by anxiety to the verge of desperation, through expectancy.

Yes, Jesus knew only too well, the awful portending, the beginning of the terrible crisis to culminate at the altar; but more, He saw the long long past of 4000 years in which truth had been the slave of sin, beginning in the choice of Woman; He saw the awful maelstrom of sin and evil, swirling about Him, and into this He must voluntarily throw Himself, if He

APPENDIX

would arrest evil; subconsciously He knew, what His intentions and determinations were, and what He would do, but just for a moment, as He viewed the awful picture, the human cried out in agony, not to His mother, but to the personification of the origin of evil, and His soul fairly recoils in disgust, at the thought of plunging into this hellish slough of filth and corruption, and then He cries out in agony that He cannot do it, that He is not able, that He has not the power to cope with the situation.

This only lasts for a brief period, and the mother awaits with stoical fortitude, the result; soon a new inborn strength arises, as the first pangs of agony are passed.

His mother has witnessed the scene, and knows now that He has made the choice, and between them there now exists a bond never to be broken by any spirit of evil, they both stand supreme, and above its influence, she knows now what He will do, and so reading His thoughts, she tells the servants to do His bidding.

Once again, in closing, let me repeat, that as is generally thought, the exclamation of Jesus, was not directed to His mother, but was a response to her appeal, directed to the origin of sin; also, that the few words spoken by both of them, show that they had a profound knowledge of the meaning of the transaction at hand and that the object to be attained was priceless, so much so, that they estimated that all that they could give, as being less than enough.

Unfortunately for Man, the philosophical scientific conclusions of the 20th century, stand in opposition to this.



